**Foreword**

In Washington, President Cain prepares his first State of the Union with the intent of destroying the free world. With The Temple fully rebuilt for the third and final time, Israel prepares for a national celebration. Babylon, the seat of power for the revived Roman Empire, is completed.

As Elijah invokes the sacrifice again, he proves that Adonai's power is present. As he gets closer to achieving the 144,000, it becomes more of a reality. Captured by Cain, two individuals from Eden II are held in Babylon for a mock trial, where Cain aims to obtain the death penalty.

Since Nimrod, Cain became the world's first dictator. Using Mark Anderson's crafty ability, Enoch funnels millions of dollars, cycling the money to thousands of Christian communes in the mountains of North and South America before the chips system reboots.

As an assassin causes a deadly head wound, the prophecy is fulfilled. The False Prophet is given the power to heal.

The first half of Tribulation ends first in sorrow, then in celebration.

**Revelations 7:13-14**

These in white robes—who are they, and where did they come from? Sir, you know, these are they who have come out of the great Tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

**About Reverend Samuel David**

**A person wearing sunglasses

Description automatically generated with medium confidence**Samuel David is retired from the computer industry and lives in South Texas. His interest in end times spans over a half a century. Frustration with end time books and a dream ten years ago has resulted in the release of this series of books. In collaboration with Pastor Robert Lee, all five books were rewritten and updated to reflect the times we live in today.

**About Paster Robert Lee**

A person smiling for the camera

Description automatically generated with medium confidenceRobert is a freelance editor, ordained minister, teacher of the Word for over 30 years. He and his wife are Christian marriage counselors. His passion is taking truths from God’s Word and bringing them to life so others can share in their revelation. He is an avid tennis player and works in the investment world. Together, they have 6 adult children, and 9 grandchildren.

**Rachel Schmiedel**

Illustrator and Cover Designer

All rights reserved.

**Books by**

**Reverend Samuel David and Pastor Robert Lee**

Book I, Enoch, The First Witness (The First Four Days)

Book II, Elijah and The Temple

Seeking the 144,000 (The Next Five Days)

Book III, The Rise of Cain

Book IV, God’s Trumpets of Wrath

Book V, Babylon: Revival of the Roman Empire

Book VI, The Final Trumpet, Jesus Triumphant Return

**Other Books by Samuel David**

You Paid What?

Mike and I and the Great Adventure

State Hospital Number 2

Website. [**www.witnesspartners.com**](http://www.witnesspartners.com)

##### Email comments: witnesspartners@gmail.com

**God’s**

**Trumpets of Wrath**

Reverend Samuel David

Pastor Robert Lee

**God’s Trumpets of Wrath Book 4 of 6**

Copyright 2019 Samuel David

KDP Amazon Issue

**Published by Witness Partners**

This hard copy or eBook is licensed for your personal enjoyment only. This eBook may not be re-sold or given away to other people. If you would like to share this book with another person, please purchase an additional copy for each recipient. If you’re reading this book and did not purchase it, or it was not purchased for your enjoyment only, then please return to Amazon.com or your favorite retailer and purchase your own copy. Thank you for respecting the hard work of these authors.

ISBN 9798372816718

**Disclaimer:**

This book and its contents are a work of fiction. All the characters and or places and or companies referred to are a part of the Author’s imagination or public domain.

All ideas, concepts and storyline are the sole property of the Author.

Use of Biblical scripture and interpretation in this book, are based on the Author’s opinion and not necessarily that of other scholars.

First Release 2019

Revised Release 2022

Library of Congress Cataloguing in Publication Data Available

All prices for electronic, paperback, or hard copy are subject to change.

**Main Characters in this Series**

**Eden II**

John Roddenburg, Anchor

Donald (Don) McAfee, Producer

Mary Ann Sinclair, Co-Anchor

Geraldo Vasquez, Co-Anchor

Chester Nichols, Meteorologist

Mary Veronica Magdalene, Security

Enil, Manager of Eden II, Computers, and technology

Mark, (Originally Reverend Marks)

Mauvad Shasahvar, (Former President of Iran)

Richard Stevenson, (Former President USA)

Richard Stanton, congressional representative

David Matthews, Analyst

Liang Enlai, (Prior Premier of the Government of the People’s Republic of China)

Pyotr Durnovo, Russian Council of Ministers

Cardinal Mahoney, Exiled from Church

Benjamin Krasner, Prior Israeli Spy

Charlotte Krasner, Prior IDF

John Modesta**,** Israeli Spy

Tahit, Fathom Correspondent

Mark Anderson, Attorney

**Fallen/USA**

Robert Cain, President of the United States

Sir Devon Jordan, Father of Cain. (Beelzebub, Lucifer, Satan, Ah Satan, Iblis, Morningstar)

Jamal Jones, Director of Homeland Security USA (Penemue)

General David Stoups, Chief of Staff, USA (Gadreel)

Marcus Schmidt, Director of the FBI (Kokabel)

Able Richards, Secret Service Director

Christopher Hughes, White House Press Secretary

Samuel Jordan, FEMA Director (Anane)

Bill Krasner, Secretary of State (Akibeel)

Gordon Bermann, SEC chairperson (Tamaiel)

Weiymer Weinstadt, Federal Reserve Chairman (Amazarak)

Mason Jordan, President of the Catholic Hospital (Armers)

Tom Bowman, President CEO Universal Drug Corporation (Semyaza**)**

David Snyder, owner of BIZ WHIZ Software (Barkayal)

David Karash, House Majority Leader (Danel)

Jerry Poloski, General United States Air Force (Azkeel)

Robert Parrish, Admiral United States Navy (Saraknyal)

Joseph Raced, Supreme Commander United States Marines (Batraal)

Aafre Waldger, Industrialist (Azazel)

**THE Network**

Joe Biggman, President (Ertael)

Brad Williams, Anchor

Catherine Kwan, Co-Anchor

Nancy Arms, Co-Anchor

Johnathon Langer, Producer

**Israel**

David Ben Bernstein, Prime Minister

Yona Salant, Chief Rabbi Ashkenazi side

Benjamin Hagen, Chief Rabbi Sephardi side

Shlomo Mendel, Minister of Defense

Meyer Branlin, Director of Mossad

Jacob Swartz, Chief of Staff

John Bernstein, Captain IDF

Rabbi Cohen, The Temple Institute

Jaeger Barak, Israel News Correspondent

Benjamin, News Correspondent

**Russia**

Vladimir Leshev, Russian President (Shamsiel)

**China**

Yuan Kwan, Premier of China (Araqiel)

**Japan**

Tkuya Kyoto, Prime Minister Japan (Amsaveel)

**England**

Robert Weingart, Prime Minister (Ezequeel)

**Italy**

Mario DeEnbetti, President of Italy (Yomvael)

**Iran**

Ayatollah Shahin Moneim, Supreme Leader (Sariel)

**Iraq**

Abbas Abu Laden, Successor of the late Abu Bakr al-Baghdadi, Sunni Leader

**Pakistan**

Hamza Quambrini, President of Pakistan (Urakabarameel)

**Farm/ Salina**

Albert (Al) Meers, Farmer

Linda Meers, Wife of Al

Roy Meers, Son

Jim Reeves, Farm Bureau

Dr. Steven Johnson (Doc) Veterinarian

Patty Johnson, Wife of Doc

**USGS**

Brian Chen

Debbie

Chris Wallen, Secretary of the Interior

**Planetary Defense**

Alice Markovich, NASA Director

Dr. Hans Schmidt, Program Director

Sheldon Rikers, Defense Officer

Linda Perkins, Public Communications, Officer

Logan Diaz, Program Manager, International, Partnerships.

Tom Armstrong, Scientist

Glenda Purcell, Scientist

**Miscellaneous Reporters**

Abe Schriever, Washington Post

David Schellenger, The New York Times

Elaine Foster, THE Network News

Harry McCoy, Boston Globe

Oscar Weimar, Babylon News

Samuel Heinicke, Jerusalem News Service

Susan Whitaker, THE Network

**Seal Team**

Master Chief Petty Officer Williams

Master Chief Petty Officer Stankus

Petty Officer Jenkins

Petty Officer Presley

Petty Officer Rex

**Others**

Tom Wilkes, congressional representative

Caleb Schmitt, Colonel, Assassins Leader

Muhammed Alisar, Sargent, Assassins

Benjamin, Jewish Elder, Goat Haunt

Richard Stankus, Reverend, Goat Haunt

Jack and Marilyn Okabee, Rescued RV Travelers

Paul Morgan, One of the 144,000

**Revelations 8:6**

##### Then the seven Angels who had the seven Trumpets prepared to sound them

### Chapter 1

##### Congressional Representative Richard Stanton’s Home

##### Georgetown, DC

##### The Offer

S

eated comfortably in Richard's elegant dining room, the twelve guests savored every bite of their delicious meal. There were twelve individuals in the group, all of whom were members of a congressional evangelical organization. Established in 2009, this congressional caucus broke away from the original 'Tea Party' movement and formed its own entity. Their numbers were once stronger, filling the air with unwavering voices not long ago. As the group dwindled to just 40 members, a noticeable shift in attitudes occurred. However, Richard trusted these twelve individuals because their lives embodied the compassion and selflessness of Christ. In these challenging times, Richard yearned to witness the unwavering devotion they held.

“You are all here so I can share urgent news that requires our immediate action,” Richard said, capturing their undivided attention.

“Enoch has contacted me, entrusting me with the responsibility of selecting caucus members who are genuinely devoted to Christ. Each of you has been singled out for potential selection. Enoch's directive requires swift action on your part - a decision must be made immediately. Your choice will have a profound impact on both your family and the future of the United States of America. Jesus, in Matthew 16, verses 24 and 25, called upon His disciples to walk in His footsteps.”

Richard picked up his worn Bible, its pages marked with years of use, to read the passage to them.

“Jesus told His followers, if anyone would come after Me, he must deny himself, take up his cross and follow me. For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it.”

Richard placed the Bible on the table, feeling the weight of its ancient pages in his hands, and saw every eye in the room fixated on him. With his words, he commanded their undivided attention.

“As we eagerly anticipate, next week marks the reopening of our Nation's capital, now fully rebuilt. A week from today, President Cain will deliver his inaugural 'State of the Union' address. After his speech, Enoch gravely informed me that Cain's henchmen would execute any government official present at the event. This includes members of the Department of Justice, whose presence ensures law and order, the House and Senate, who shape legislation, the Supreme Court, the ultimate arbiter of justice, and Cabinet members, who advise the President. The only ones left standing will be his Vice President, who will have been publicly announced, and the chosen cabinet members who were absent.”

A wave of gasps rippled through the room, echoing with surprise and shock. Their eyes widened and their jaws dropped, mirroring Richard's astonished reaction when Enoch shared the narrative with him. Eagerly filled with curiosity, Michael Adkins, the congressional representative from Georgia, sought out more information with his inquisitive voice.

“Is Cain's plan genuinely sinister, with the goal of eliminating every single one of us without exception?”

“It's unfortunate, Michael, but yes,” he said as he sighed, acknowledging the undeniable truth in his statement.

“Richard, we need more information,” inquired another Congressperson, wanting him to elaborate on the details.

“This is the extent of what I have. Enoch revealed their plans to me. I am completely convinced that what he warned about is true.”

“Richard, what is the precise nature of your proposal? Is it not required to notify someone?” Listing the influential agencies involved, Tom insisted that they were the FBI, the CIA, and the Capital Police.

“Notifying authorities will prove to be futile. During one of our President's administrations, there was a significant event where the FBI, CIA, and the DOJ made attempts to remove the President from office. Every governmental agency is intricately woven into their plan. If they successfully carry out their plan, Cain will have complete and total power. Making the choice to leave is a difficult decision. However, declining Enoch's offer would result in each of us facing certain assassination.”

“Let me make sure I understand correctly you're saying that we have the option to choose?” Tom's question hung in the air, waiting for a response.

“The current offer gives you a chance to find a way out, as stated by Enoch, and remember that you don't have to accept it.”

“I would like to know more about the offer he has presented. Can you explain it further?”

“Tom, Enoch has extended an invitation for us to seek refuge at Eden II, which is currently their place of residence. Due to our representation of ten states, he firmly believes that we can leverage their efforts to discredit Cain, and simultaneously provide the hope of Jesus to every single American. We possess the information and are aware of the true identity of Cain. His allegiance lies with Satan. Despite this, we have refrained from being excessively vocal about our beliefs. If we accept Enoch's offer, not only can we support Eden II, but we can also contribute to spreading the good news of Christ through broadcasting. Our Christian stance is widely recognized across the nation, making our group well-known. At Eden II, we will play a significant role by exposing the falsehoods propagated by Cain and his imminent establishment of a global governance system.”

“When are we to leave?” another asked.

Richard, speaking in a calm tone, informed everyone that their departure would take place tonight, after dinner. The reaction of the people was exactly what he had anticipated. As they started interrupting one another, each of them fervently demanded more distinct answers. Richard, after a short period of time, raised both of his hands in acknowledgment of the concerns expressed by the individuals present. The room fell silent as the chattering ceased.

“I urge you to consider carefully the generous offer that Enoch has extended.” Unfortunately, this is the extent of the information that I am able to provide you with. The deadline for your decision is tonight, so it is imperative that you take action accordingly and follow these steps. When you go back home, make sure to pack one suitcase for each person in your immediate family. The individuals who are eligible for this are limited to your spouse and any minor children who are currently residing with you. Unfortunately, there are no other family members allowed. No family members, such as in-laws, mothers, or fathers. There will be absolutely no phone calls, goodbyes, or any form of communication. If we are detected, there is a high likelihood that they will round us up, so we cannot take that risk. In the unfortunate event that we are caught, they will take measures to dispose of us.”

“Are you telling me they have plans to harm us?” Carletta of Minnesota nervously asked, her voice trembling as she swallowed hard.

“Their intention was to extinguish our lives, confine us to darkness, erase us from memory. With their abundant resources, they have the means to make it happen. President Stevenson's broadcasts from Eden II serve as a chilling reminder of their ruthless nature, leaving no room for mercy.”

Richard's warning hit them like a punch to the gut, leaving his group feeling uneasy. As he looked around, he couldn't help but notice the signs of fear etched on people's faces, others in a state of shock.

“You have a two-hour deadline to come back to this location. We have a limited timeframe to make a decision. The seconds are passing by.”

“Can my daughter, her husband, and my grandchildren come too? The question was raised by South Carolina congressman Jerry Wilen.

“As I stated, they cannot come. I am sorry.”

Richard's answer made the room silent as they pondered the repercussions. Many were fixated on their partially consumed dishes. Richard empathetically grasped their emotional suffering as they faced the possibility of losing their lives and loved ones. He made the decision to be straightforward and share the dreadful truth.

“If we don't seize Enoch's offer, we'll perish. He has a perfect track record of being correct. To go to Eden II will enable us to assist a larger number of individuals effectively. Being deceased doesn't help in spreading our faith, promoting the Gospel, and harvesting souls. My wife and young daughter are packed, ready to leave. I'm counting on each of you to come back. If you're not planning to come, please inform me at this moment.”

No one acknowledged him. Many started asking questions of each other. He answered a concern by using a quote from scripture.

“Our decision boils down to deciding as the Apostles did; when Christ came asking, ‘Will you follow me?’ They left everything they had and followed him. The good news is your immediate families are welcome. They will be under God’s protection during these times of Tribulation. So… make up your minds and no more questions, please.”

The entire group pondered their own destiny as they left one by one. Upon their departure, Becky, Richard's wife, appeared troubled.

“How many individuals are expected to return?” She inquired.”

“All of them, except for one. Our family and just eleven others will answer the call.”

“Who told you only eleven will heed the call?”

“Enoch told me.”

“Do you know which one? What if this individual contacts someone who could jeopardize our plans?”

“I'm sorry, I don't know which one. We need to place our faith in Enoch’s words. He reassured me that he was prepared to handle any issues that may arise during our escape. We should stop focusing on these questions and move ahead. Currently, I'm asking you to take our children with you in the car to the agreed-upon meeting point.”

“Richard...”

“We will be okay, Becky, trust in God,” Richard said, stopping her in mid-sentence. “God protects us. I know this in my heart. I need to stay here to give instructions on where to go as the others return. I did not tell them before they left, we are meeting Enoch somewhere else.”

With tears streaming down her cheeks, Becky walked slowly upstairs to gather their daughter. Richard walked into their living room and sat in his favorite chair one last time to wait for the others. He pondered their choice to abandon everything. Making the decision to leave everything is challenging.

### Chapter 2

##### Congressional Representative Tom Wilkes Home

##### Alexandria, VA

##### Deathly Decision

T

he drive from Richard’s house was difficult. Tom was conflicted about whether to go, stay, or fight. He grasped the message that Richard passed on to the group. Despite everything, he still held onto the belief that the United States Government was in control, not Cain. He felt a tug within him, urging him to go. His mind was urging him to report Cain's intentions to the FBI, where he planned to kill nearly everyone associated with the government. Wrestling with the problem, Tom finally reached home. He parked his car in the garage and walked inside. Kathy, his wife, welcomed him with a kiss.

“Was your dinner meeting productive, Tom?” She asked.

“I'm completely taken aback by Richard's post-dinner suggestion, and it's really throwing me off.”

Tom shared the details with his wife, along with the direction he believed they should pursue. He expressed to Kathy that he believed he was betraying his nation. Kathy gave her full attention and nodded in agreement with his assessment.

“Tom, I believe it's best if we don't go. It makes me uneasy to go to an unfamiliar location and leave behind our current life, friends, home, and the children's school. We just got back from evacuating DC and staying with your parents during the hurricanes. We have our home, our life… well, everything is here. I can't come up with a single motive for us to go. While we have faith in Jesus, I believe Richard is going too far.”

“I understand your feelings. We share the same sentiment. It's possible that disclosing this to the right person could prevent this plot. We are in need of someone who has the ability and willingness to help.”

“Who can you trust, Richard? Are there any people you know personally at the FBI or CIA?”

“I have some contacts there. Exposing Cain's plans to Congress eliminates the need for anyone in our group to flee to Eden II.”

“I agree with you. You know people at the FBI and CIA. We've had dinner with a few of them before. I am certain they will pay attention to what you have to say.”

Turning away from his wife, Tom made his way to his home office. Pausing in his tracks, he redirected his attention towards Kathy.

“I have confidence in someone who can be trusted and will support us.”

Seated at his desk, Tom brought up his contact file on his laptop. He called Marcus Schmidt, the Director of the FBI. He left a message for Marcus, which was urgent, and then ended the call. Leaning back, Tom directed his gaze towards the ceiling. They both earned their degrees from Harvard at the same time. He would treat his call with utmost seriousness.

### Chapter 3

##### Vacant Farmhouse

##### Outside Haymarket, Virginia

##### The Rescue

B

ecky and her daughter left in advance to the rendezvous point, leaving Richard to wait for the return of the others. Upon the arrival of each family, he provided directions to the farmhouse located outside of Haymarket, Virginia. Richard secured his home for the final time, pulled his car out of the garage, and made his way to the farmhouse after everyone but one person had arrived. The rendezvous point was a 30-minute drive at midnight. I-66 had light traffic, which was a relief.

Richard arrived at the farmhouse, got out of his car, and made his way to an old barn. The foundation of the barn remained intact. Richard observed Enoch putting people into a contraption that appeared to be a suspended computer mouse. Richard guessed that these were the modes of transport Enoch informed him about. As he completed the loading of a group onto the second transport, Enoch signaled for Richard to join him.

“Richard, we have one more group left and only 30 minutes until the next flight. Your wife and kids have already departed.”

They watched the transport doors automatically close. The two vehicles ascended vertically and vanished into the dark sky. Enoch invited Richard to join him on the barn's foundation by motioning towards him.

“Richard, I assume someone from your group hasn't arrived?”

“Sadly, the answer is yes. As you mentioned before, someone would choose not to participate. Tom made the decision not to attend. I wished you were mistaken, and that everyone came.”

“Richard, there is a deep internal struggle happening within Tom. His actions tonight don't indicate that he no longer believes. His approach to protecting his family and country differs. Before long, he will come to understand the seriousness of his mistake. His spirit and free will were not in harmony, so we can no longer provide support. We do not need a ‘doubting Thomas.’ The decision to come was based on pure faith. He made the decision not to follow.”

“I understand Enoch. I will miss him.”

“It's clear to you now why I specifically told you not to reveal the rendezvous point at your dinner. As we speak, I am confident that the FBI is at your house. There's a chance you might have been followed here, but we can't be certain. The FBI moves quickly when they need to. But, in case they decide to intervene, I am prepared.”

“Not to switch gears, but I can't help but notice that you're dressed for a fight. I notice the crossed swords on your back and the curved knife on your clothes. You resemble a warrior from ancient times.”

“I won’t need the weapons, Richard; I have the staff of Moses. The book of Revelation describes how I exhale fire from my mouth. The power lies within the staff that I possess.”

“I remember the passage, Enoch. The eleventh chapter of Revelation. If anyone wants to harm them, fire proceeds from their mouths and devours their enemies.”

“This is correct. You'll understand once you listen to this story. My Midwest upbringing predates my return to being Enoch. In the past, there were traveling revivals that I experienced. My family went to multiple events where the evangelists preached with intense fire and brimstone. They terrified anyone who was unfamiliar with the Lord. My speaking style is fiery and intense, just like Elijah's. The Lord's Word comes from our mouths. You shouldn't expect me to breathe fire, similar to a dragon. That's not going to occur.”

“I must confess, those verses left me perplexed. In a movie about the end times, the Witnesses used fire to destroy a group of soldiers shooting at them. I found the scene amusing. Their mouths emitted fire that looked like Independence Day sparklers,” Richard said, a slight smile forming on his lips.

They kept talking about how powerful the staff is. Enoch fell silent, directing his attention to the sky in the east.

“Richard, can you hear that noise? It’s like a vibrating sound resonating through the air.”

“Since you brought it up, there's something coming closer in the distance. It resembles the sound of approaching helicopter blades.”

“My sentiments exactly. They must have got to Tom before you left. It's possible that you were being followed.”

Enoch glanced at the helicopters closing in, then shifted his gaze back to Richard.

“Richard, move everyone else, including yourself, to that shed,” Enoch directed, gesturing towards a small building nearby, approximately 50 yards away.

“I can help Enoch with stopping whoever is coming.”

“Do as you are told. Go to the shed with the others. I'll deal with these unwanted visitors myself.”

Richard followed the instructions and hastily rounded up the others, their hurried footsteps echoing as they gathered their possessions, before dashing towards the shed. Enoch stood in the open field, his eyes fixed on the approaching aircraft, its engines roaring in the distance. Several sirens blared, indicating the imminent arrival of police or agency cars at the farmhouse. Two Blackhawks arrived from the east, their powerful rotors causing a deafening roar as they hovered above the old barn's foundation. Enoch found himself engulfed in the bright beams of their searchlights. With the Blackhawk door swinging open, an agent holding a bullhorn directed a command towards Enoch, the sound reverberating in the air.

‘Stand down. We are landing; everyone here is under arrest. If anyone dares to flee, law enforcement will use deadly force as a deterrent.”

Enoch's response echoed through the air with a voice so thunderous it drowned out the sound of the helicopter's blades.

“Hurry, flee from this place and ensure your own safety. If you remain here tonight, you will have a personal encounter with the Lord God Himself. Prepare yourself, for I will soon send you to the fiery depths of hell.”

From the open doors of the helicopter, several armed soldiers surveyed their surroundings with caution. The sheer volume of Enoch's voice took aback the bullhorn's operator, which reverberated through the air. He repeated his demands, emphasizing the authority of both the FBI and Homeland Security.

“Enoch, your sorcery, and enchantments are not something we put our faith in. Surrender now, as we have agents surrounding you from every direction.”

The authorities illuminated the field and farmhouse with their vehicle lights upon arrival. They positioned themselves around the farmhouse, all their weapons aimed at Enoch. The front and back entrances of the home were covered by other agents. The Blackhawks floated above, their blades slicing through the air, the thumping vibrations resonating. Enoch remained the center of attention as the aircraft's spotlights continued to shine on him in the open field. Once again, Enoch made his threat known to the people in the helicopter and the agents near the farmhouse. It was a Mexican standoff. Enoch stood his ground, unwavering, as the Blackhawks remained suspended in the air above him. The Blackhawks' pilots were unsure about their next move. Across the field, the blaring sound of another bullhorn echoed from an agent's car.

“This is FBI Agent Williams. Enoch, there's no escape - you're surrounded. Without delay, your friends and you must submit to my agents. No one is at risk of getting hurt.”

As Enoch stood there, he couldn't help but be mesmerized by the dazzling lights beaming from the Blackhawks' searchlights, casting an illuminating aura around him. Enoch paid no attention to the instructions, even after the agent repeated the threat multiple times. He was stalling. Wide-eyed, the children peeked around the shed's corner, observing the scene in silence.

Ten minutes later, Enoch's eyes caught sight of the transports making their way back. As Enoch approached the shed, the beams from the Blackhawks illuminated his path. Enoch motioned for Richard to step out of the shadows and join him in the open.

“The transports will land exactly where I am standing. They will probably open fire on them without warning. No need to fear their shots. They are completely harmless. Their bullets cannot penetrate the transports. Please make sure that everyone stays below the height of the transport's doors while I handle these intruders. Load everyone, two on each side. They will rotate automatically, shielding everyone from the onslaught of gunfire.”

“I got it,” Richard confirmed as Enoch returned to the open field.

About a hundred paces from Richard, Enoch came to a stop. He looked up at the Blackhawk and shouted another threat.

“Are you prepared to meet your creator at this moment?” Or will you let us finish our business here?”

The view of Enoch and the farmhouse was blocked by both transports as they landed in front of the shed. Both doors opened simultaneously. Richard told everyone to stay low and remain below the doors.

AK fire erupted in bursts while Blackhawks fired single shots, but none of them could penetrate the transport. The transports did not budge from their loading positions. The terrified individuals were loaded onto one side by Richard before the doors were closed. The rotation of both transports coincided with the opening of the doors. The last two were loaded into the first transport by him. The first loaded transport took off, disappearing into the night sky as shells bounced off it. The other waited in place for the last two passengers: Enoch and Richard.

As Richard observed Enoch, he couldn't help but notice a faint, light blue haze encircling him. As soon as he saw the same blue light, memories of the Kansas City event came rushing back. The bullets aimed at Enoch bounced off the blue force field, creating a cacophony of metallic clinks.

Witnessing the departure of the one transport, Enoch raised his staff and directed a powerful bolt of lightning at the Blackhawk, electrifying the atmosphere. As the explosion erupted, the rotors became detached, propelling the blades upwards and then violently spiraling down, tearing through the ground and vegetation. As the Blackhawk helicopter violently collided with the ground, a cloud of dust and debris filled the surroundings. The shooters were propelled out of the open doors, their bodies lifeless as soon as they made contact with the ground. When he peered inside the Blackhawk window, the sight that greeted him was two pilots, unconscious and slumped over the control console.

As Enoch pointed his staff toward the other helicopter, he could see the panic in the pilot's eyes as they quickly steered the Blackhawk away from him, desperate to escape. With a wave of his staff, Enoch let them go and directed his attention towards the agent's cars, conjuring streams of lightning or fireballs. The bursts of energy struck the cars, causing them to explode with a deafening boom before quickly disappearing.

With a flick of his wrist, Enoch pointed his staff at the farmhouse, a surge of energy pulsating through his veins. All it took was one burst from the staff to send shockwaves through the air. In a sudden burst of flames, the farmhouse erupted into a massive fireball. The explosive force sent the hiding agents soaring through the air. They screamed in agony as flames engulfed their clothes.

Low on the ground, the remaining agents unleashed a barrage of gunfire at Enoch. As the bullets were fired at him, they were deflected by the ethereal blue haze surrounding him, creating a chorus of pinging sounds. With his feet planted firmly on the ground, Enoch's angry shout echoed through the air.

“To the fires of hell, you go!” His words echoing through the countryside, sending shivers down their spines.

With a swift motion, he raised his staff and aimed it directly at the firing agents, a determined look on his face. The air was filled with the acrid smell of burning flesh as bodies were scattered by the powerful blasts of fire from Enoch's staff. The firing ceased, leaving behind an eerie silence in the air. Calmly walking toward the transports, Enoch ignored their desperate cries for help while the blue haze slowly dissipated.

He gave Richard a firm instruction to get in, and Enoch followed behind. As the door closed, the pungent smell of sulfur filled the air, mingling with the haunting cries of those trapped in the farmhouse fire. Enoch fulfilled his promise, condemning those souls to the fiery depths of hell.

### Chapter 4

##### White House, Oval Office

##### Washington DC

##### Permanently Removed

C

ain was filled with anger as he watched the live feed from the Blackhawk camera video of the farmhouse disaster.

“Who gave permission for this? Is it not obvious that I have been clear? Enoch is out of bounds! Schmidt, what seems to be the issue?

“Cain, we thought we could take him out and recover the fleeing Congress members and their families.”

“Stop overthinking, Director. You should be aware that Enoch may have a digital video recording of your assault and threats. Someone had a smartphone so they could show this video in their broadcasts. It portrays us in a negative light. Escaping the noose is bad, but our actions make us seem like savage attackers of children.”

“Cain, we're sorry. We genuinely believed we were making the correct decision.”

“Who cares? We were aware that this would happen. In the near future, people will develop a strong dislike for them. With the truce ending yesterday, Enoch is about to unleash God's devastating destruction on our world. The world will hold animosity towards God and Enoch.”

Cain made the choice to relax and regain composure. He was letting his anger control him.

“Regarding your informant, we must take care of him. It's evident that he is well-informed about our plans.”

“We held the congressional representative under house arrest until we could assess the participants who defected to Enoch or Eden II,” Schmidt said. “We completed a list of defectors; they are 11 members of the evangelical caucuses. They represent 10 states.”

“What's the deal with the snitch? What actions have we taken regarding him?”

“He and his wife were permanently disposed of. We wanted to prevent him from discussing his version with the press regarding the other eleven families and what happened. We entrusted social services with the children's care, arranging for them to be placed in a foster home. Their children do not pose a threat.”

“Director Schmidt, or Kokabel, the only thing you did right was getting rid of them. The defection of these congresspersons is no longer newsworthy. Let's talk about my State of the Union Speech and the simultaneous gathering of Parliament in England. We will kill two birds with one stone.”

### Chapter 5

##### Mountains of Northern Israel

##### Gabriel’s Demands

E

lijah looked up from the fire as the silent swoosh of the transport disturbed the peaceful air. He was eagerly waiting for Enoch to arrive. As Enoch exited, he greeted his fellow Witness. Enoch greeted Elijah in Hebrew with a bow and an embrace.

“Shalom Elijah, nekhmad lir-ot otkha shmeuv,” which means, ‘hello, it is nice to see you again.’ “Please have a seat by the fire.”

They positioned themselves across from one another on the ground near the fire. Enoch's lack of words indicated a confrontation with the enemy. The silence was broken by Elijah.

“Were the evacuations successful?”

“Yes, we gathered the true believers, lawmakers from the United States, and Great Britain. This group will persuade a lot of people from their countries about the truth behind Cain and the 200.”

“What is the number?”

“If we don't include their families, the count is thirty. Twelve representatives from the U.S. Congress, and eighteen from Great Britain's Parliament.”

“They will be a valuable aid to our ministry amidst the world's troubles at Eden II.

“I have no doubt about it.”

Sitting and watching the fire burn, Enoch spoke, breaking his trance he seemed to be in.”

“Israel's new borders were officially approved by the world's governments during our truce. At last, the prophecy has come to pass. The Prime Minister stated that they have a new security agreement for the next seven years. Currently, 95 percent of the land originally given to the Israelites fleeing from Egypt is under their control. Jews from all corners of the world have contributed to Israel's population, which now exceeds 30 million. Having completed this, we can now move forward and set the stage for the next chapter.”

“This is pleasing Enoch, yet troubling. The refugees from these territories will give Cain and his supporters boundless power to conquer Christianity and democracy. Sharia Law will be implemented in numerous western countries, and the false religion's malevolence will support it.”

“Regrettably, Elijah, individuals have forsaken God. Many were convinced that God is a myth due to the media's collaboration with false spirits and atheists. The False Prophet is attempting to deceive people by combining Islam, Judaism, and Christianity into a false religion of the Antichrist, targeting the vulnerable. This doctrine has a significant number of priests and clerics who are following it. There are still evangelicals who refuse to accept us. They persist in asserting and advocating for a rapture before The Time of Sorrows.”

“I understand, Enoch. On the bright side, there is some good news. The completion of God's Temple is almost here. Our team is organizing a global televised tour of 'The Temple'. Our goal in this presentation is to elucidate the meaning of each area. The construction should be completed by the Levites in three months.”

“Elijah, I can't wait to see the final product. It will be an honor. The presentation will depict 'The Temple' in its original state during King Solomon's era. On another subject, the goods, and materials we redirected to Israel from Aafre’s companies have provided supplies and homes for Jewish immigrants. During 'The Time of Sorrows,' there will be enough food and infrastructure supplies. Oil reserves, enough for five years, are safely stored in ancient mines.”

“We pulled that one over on the demons,” Enoch said as he broke out in laughter. “Aafre has finally discovered our alteration of his company's manifest to reroute goods to Israel. It took them well over a year to uncover Matthews' actions against them. He informed me that the estimated total repurposed, in addition to oil, exceeded 420,000 tons of supplies. The provided resources enabled Israel to reach its building targets. It would have been great to see Aafre's expression when they found out!”

Enoch laughed, thoroughly enjoying their mischievous adventure. Elijah was delighted by his friend's enthusiasm and smiled. Yet, his mind was occupied with alternate ideas.

“Enoch, now that the truce is over, it is time to enforce consequences upon unbelievers, including those who do not believe in Israel. It's important that we put a stop to Cain, his followers, and his demonic father. Once we're no longer here, they'll have complete control over governing. During the second half of the Tribulation, there will be a greater need for Christians to make a stand for Jesus.”

Enoch breathed in deeply and then let it out. It was evident to Elijah that he still appeared troubled.

“Enoch, are you bothered or disturbed?”

“No Elijah. I am considering different plans in my head. Once Cain takes action against humanity, I'll dismantle America's infrastructure. This action will result in him being permanently confined to his new home in Babylon. This will make sure he stays where he should be.”

Their conversation persisted, centered around thwarting Cain. The fire danced as a gust of wind blew in from a landing transport. They were awaiting the arrival of a guest from New Jerusalem. As Gabriel disembarked, Enoch and Elijah stood and offered their respect with a bow.

“Aˈlom ʔaˈlejxem, (peace be with you),” they both said. “Let's take a seat,” Gabriel replied. “There's so much we need to discuss. The food looks good, I assume we are to eat?”

“Definitely Gabriel. We have your favorites.” Elijah said smiling knowing Gabriel loved roasted lamb, as much as they did.

Among the offerings made by Elijah to Gabriel were ancient-style roasted lamb slices and an assortment of fruits. Following the meal, Gabriel poured more wine from a flask and shifted his gaze towards Enoch.

“Enoch,” he asked, his tone somber, “the truce is no longer in effect, correct?”

“It's over as of yesterday.”

“You allocated too much time to them. The world must endure the horrors of God's Tribulation. The nonbelievers should be punished, and it's crucial to subdue Cain's power prior to your departure from Earth. We refrained from taking action until your truce concluded. We need to accelerate the timetable to realign with God's plan. At this moment, the initial Trumpet in Heaven is being blown. The breaking of the first seal occurred. We are about to witness the fulfillment of Revelation 6:1-2. I am aware that you have these words committed to memory.”

“Indeed, Gabriel, I do. ‘Now I watched when the Lamb opened one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four living creatures say with a voice like thunder, Come! And I looked and behold a white horse! Its rider had a bow, and a crown was given to him, and he came out conquering, and to conquer.’

“You are right Enoch,” Gabriel acknowledged. “With the breaking of the first seal, the Antichrist emerges. There will be multiple steps taking place. Initially, he'll arrive on a white horse, symbolizing a peaceful demeanor. So far, this is what Cain has been saying. He will soon become the world leader and receive his crown. With his bow in hand, he reveals his true intentions - to conquer and subjugate all of humanity. America will be the stage for his next moves, confirming this. As mentioned before, this also signifies that 'The Trumpets' are now to begin.”

“We understand, Gabriel,” Enoch said. “Once Cain asserts his power in the coming days, we will warn the world to repent and embrace Jesus before 'The Trumpets' bring calamity. We will explain as in the days of Pharaoh, God’s full wrath will be displayed upon the Earth.”

“God, Almighty has entrusted you with His power, Enoch. You have the power to manipulate the Earth, from weather to land movements and even the Heavens. Your command will bring about any necessary disasters to restrict Cain's abilities and reveal Jesus' imminent return to the world.”

Gabriel shifted his focus to Elijah.

“Elijah, Israel, is opposing you and your message about Jesus being their Messiah. Only a few Jews acknowledge the truth. There are still many with hearts that are difficult to soften. Before you are taken, we must prepare 144,000 Jewish believers to spread the good news of Christ worldwide.”

“I grasp the meaning of your words. We are almost finished with the construction of the Temple. Prior to your arrival, Enoch and I had a discussion about this concern. Gabriel, rest assured that I will bring punishment upon Israel, similar to the days of Baal. I will compel them to acknowledge that Adonai has already sent Jesus as their Messiah.”

“For both of you, realize, every Gentile and Jew have the opportunity to make their own personal decision according to God's plan. It's not our intention to coerce them into adopting the truth. To find redemption, they need to experience a spiritual rebirth and actively seek forgiveness for their transgressions. To gain salvation and divine protection, they must accept Jesus as the world's Savior and receive God's seal on their foreheads.”

“Gabriel,” Elijah said, “we acknowledge that. Our duty is to establish the setting as prophesied for the end of the world. We're past the midpoint of our ministries. There are still numerous tasks to complete.”

“Gabriel,” Enoch affirmed, “we are progressing according to plan. God's wrath and anger will soon be unleashed upon the Earth. Many will perish and unfortunately many will embrace the deceptive, demonic religion, believing with their false faith in the antichrist and false prophet, will be able to end their suffering.”

“What measures are being implemented to cater to believers?” Gabriel inquired of Enoch.

“We used the money won by Jack South to establish underground Christian communities. The mountains of the world will serve as a sanctuary for many Christians. They are equipped with enough supplies and secure shelter to sustain themselves until Jesus returns.”

“It is important to ensure the safety of Christians. It is necessary for them to be able to endure the sorrows He will unleash upon the world. Cities will become unsafe for them. It's important to note that a significant number of Christians will lose their lives during this time, specifically in the second half, under Cain's rule. Cain and the 200 Fallen will continue martyring saints until Armageddon. According to Scripture, those who are martyred during the Tribulation for their steadfastness and testimony of Jesus and the Word of God will receive honor. Their worship is not directed towards 'The Beast' or his image, and they will not bear his 'Mark' on their foreheads or hands; instead, they will share in Christ's reign.”

“With Elijah's support, we are assigning teachers from converted Jews to every settlement. These teachers are knowledgeable about prophecies from both the Old and New Testaments.”

“Enoch, what is the number of settlements you have set up?”

“Within the next year, there are over 1,000 possible sites to accommodate 4 million Christians.”

“Are there any prerequisites set by the elders for those who want sanctuary?”

“The elders we are assigning to each group will pick trustworthy individuals. The key is to prioritize faithfulness above all else. The places are far away and isolated. Cain's associates or spies would have to endure a hostile environment and travel a great distance to report the whereabouts of our sanctuaries. Additionally, there are limitations to communication. Cell service is unavailable within a 100-mile radius of each location.”

Gabriel was sitting, his gaze fixed beyond the fire. He made direct eye contact with Enoch.

“Four million isn't a large number.”

“I agree with you, Gabriel. We're actively promoting other networks. By utilizing believers in urban areas, we established an underground network of locations for people to access food and essentials. These hidden locations offer support to individuals who reject the 'Mark of the Beast'. Over the past 50 years, there has been a decline in the Christian population. However, there are still millions of people who are exposed. Regrettably, we are unable to safeguard every single one of them.”

“Is 'The Beast' still not working?”

“Right now, yes, but that won't last much longer. Matthews and Enil informed us that Belgium's latest programs will be up and running by the end of the month. This action will result in us relinquishing complete control of their systems.”

“Let them bring it on-line Enoch. Throughout the last two years, you both preached the gospel to every corner of the globe. The good news has reached everyone's ears. The time has come for people to make their choice.”

“I will relay the message to Enil and Matthews. Gabriel, can you tell me if New Jerusalem is nearby?”

“Yes, Enoch, but New Jerusalem is well hidden. The sun is at the center, and we orbit around it in the opposite direction of the Earth. It cannot be detected using telescopes, satellites, or spacecraft telescopes. Just a reminder, either Enoch or Elijah, it's your responsibility to destroy the launch pads used for space travel worldwide. Obliterate the I.S.S. and other space stations from China, Russia, and beyond. Eradicate all sites utilized by SETI's listening devices. We desire governments to stop monitoring any signals originating from outer space. The multinational station is equipped with nuclear weapons. The elimination of that unit is necessary. If they are not armed, Earth will remain unaffected by the fallout. Nevertheless, they have to be demolished.”

“What about their satellites?” Elijah asked.

“Get rid of everything except for the ones meant for commercial broadcasting. Utilize your abilities to manipulate the asteroids in the celestial realm and eradicate the remaining ones. The second Trumpet will give you the resources to complete the necessary tasks.”

“Gabriel, your wish is my command.”

“I'm going to go now,” Gabriel said as he got up. “I will not be back until we raise your dead bodies from the streets of Jerusalem.”

Enoch and Elijah bid farewell as they stood and bowed.

“Aˈlom aˈlejxem,” Gabriel replied.

Gabriel stepped into the transport and as the doors closed the craft vanished into the Heavens. While heading back to the fire, Elijah directed his attention to Enoch.

“Where will you be heading next?”

“India-bound. I need to have a conversation with their Hindu religious leaders in order to try to convert them to Jesus and then back to Eden II. At that time, I will reveal the truth to the people of America and Great Britain, but only after Cain's coup d'état.”

“Enoch, we must compel Cain to relocate to his New Babylon City in Iraq. The world can then declare him the world dictator, fulfilling the first seal.”

“Our initial move is to render America ineffective, making them irrelevant on the global platform. In numerous regions, civilization will regress to the early 1900s. Urban dwellers will face challenges for their survival. Limited supplies of food, water, and necessities will be available. The plan is to bring about the destruction of western civilization. After completing this unwanted task, we will help Christian regions shelter refugees in remote mountain areas, away from Cain and his evil forces. Although it's difficult, we must maintain coordination with God's timeline during the final days to destroy cities and neutralize many. The task must be completed.”

“Enoch, I understand the dilemma you're facing. I too have the challenges of Israel. Turning Israel into something else is a long and difficult process. Their eyes and hearts may need God's wrath to understand the truth.”

“Elijah, I believe that what you are facing is more difficult. God has chosen Israel as His nation and people. His vision is for Israel to assume leadership of the new world during the millennium. I have confidence in your ability to be persuasive.”

“Enoch, will you be sleeping under the stars tonight? I obtained a bedroll specifically for you. Sleeping outside aids in mental clarity for me. I feel rejuvenated when I wake up.”

“I understand your perspective. I desire a life that is less complicated. The world grows more complex as we uncover greater evils each day, much like during the time of Noah and the earth’s destruction.”

“We are the vessels of the Supreme Being. We have been given a double-sided sword. One is to showcase Jesus' love for people. The second challenge we face is to establish a global governing body. This means we are helping Cain, Lucifer, and the 200 Fallen.”

“I agree with you. When the Time of Sorrows concludes, Jesus will reign over our world. Under His rule, sin and death will finally be defeated.”

Walking towards a tree, Elijah collected two bedrolls and then passed one to Enoch.

“It's time to get some rest. Our trials will be addressed tomorrow as we work towards a solution. Enoch, tonight I will dream about our future world.”

### Chapter 6

##### The Hills of Appalachia

##### North Carolina

##### Deadly Plans

##### 

C

olonel Caleb Schmitt and his team were standing on the temporary scaffolding overlooking their training areas. They had a view of the replica of the Nation's Capital Building. This secluded area in the wooded hills was well hidden, far from civilization. For 7 months, their group had been dedicated to training. From 300 Jihadists, they honed their operation to a group of 63 lethal professionals. These men had a strong aversion towards America and its core values of freedom. They had no moral objections to ending someone's life. They were fearless warriors who embraced their terrorist methods without shame.

Like many others, Caleb's roots can be traced back to Palestine. He took personal responsibility for the years of trouble Hamas caused Israel. Commandos, under his leadership, carried out numerous surprise attacks on Israel through the use of suicide bombers and sharpshooters. Through multiple tunnels near the border, his group smuggled soldiers. A few of these faithful men have now decided to join him. This was payback for the Israeli massacre back in 2024 against them and America's support of it.

His group was concerned they would be found out when the migration to America began. Caleb, along with others, had concerns about being flagged by America's Homeland Security as individuals on the terrorist watch list. Migrant entry operations were established on a military base while the U.S. resettled millions from Middle Eastern nations in trade with Israel. The volume was too much for their system to handle. Customs Agents disregarded identification and documents they once carefully examined to prevent specific individuals from entering the country.

Just one day into his stay in the United States, a covert individual from the U.S. government came up to him. The agent had knowledge of his background and key details about his career. Caleb believed that much of his past remained hidden. The fact that he knew who he really was caught his attention. He focused all his attention on the mysterious man as he revealed intricate information about a covert mission being organized.

Caleb eagerly seized the opportunity to carry out the plan he had outlined. These individuals provided the financial resources to set up the camp, totaling millions of dollars. The entire setup, including buildings and support areas, was constructed by Islamic refugees. There was no utilization of Americans. Each of them was given alternative IDs by them. Caleb is now using a name of German origin. Caleb, with complete autonomy, personally chose more recruits from the refugees. This group of soldiers was highly skilled and focused, making them the most elite assassination team ever formed. Some of them came from ISIS, Hamas, and Syrian Freedom Fighters, among other groups. Caleb is confident that these men will flawlessly execute the plan without any doubt.

He was approached by a sergeant who had been summoned from the model. Upon arriving at the tower, Caleb made it clear that he was unhappy with the previous rehearsal.

“Sargent,” he exclaimed, his tone reflecting his dissatisfaction.

“Yes, sir,” he replied in Arabic. “Colonel Schmitt, sir, what is it that you need?”

“Do it again. The pace of your commandos is too sluggish. It's crucial that we achieve a perfected operation within two days.”

“Understood, sir.”

Using a bullhorn, the Sargent shouted orders from the tower to the 30 men under his command, demanding they redo their drills and focus.

Schmitt observed as his Sargent assumed control, loudly directing each action, and meticulously reviewing every aspect. The drill reminded Caleb of the American movie classic, ‘The Dirty Dozen.’ The difference being these men bathed. Each assignment of Caleb's team was practiced separately. These men, who were stone-cold killers, were given explicit instructions to not utter the word Allah or any other nonsense. They were instructed to observe, shoot, observe again, and shoot to kill repeatedly until their mission was accomplished. Each killer was assigned a distinct grid in which to massacre their targets.

The second wave would come after the initial group. Each individual was ensured to be deceased by the second wave. Every time the trigger is pulled, it should result in a fatal shot.

Sargent Muhammed Alisar was a key component to guarantee the success of their plans. He was a battle-hardened Syrian who fought against all who invaded his country the past few decades. Alisar was a killer dedicated to the cause, death to America. He was a strict follower of Allah. He commanded men who respected his passion.

With a whistle blowing, Alisar shouted through his bullhorn.

“To the tunnels.”

Caleb and the people watching with him paid close attention as the men navigated the replica of the Capitol. The soldiers stormed the House of Representatives' chamber, shooting at the mannequins representing the occupants.

After watching the group's exercises, Caleb made his way to the next staging area. They were being taught the same routine, going through it step by step. They were practicing for the House of Commons in Great Britain. As their counterparts, the men in this company carefully executed each step of the plan. The English and Americans coordinated their state addresses. Every representative of The Commonwealth, along with the newly crowned King and his wife, would attend the session. The guest list comprised the majority of royal heirs, including princes and princesses. The other participants included Barons, Duchesses, and other titled aristocrats. The attack will result in the death of everyone except two.

The world is about to undergo a permanent change as western civilization crumbles in two days. The financial markets would crater and only Cain could resurrect it. The objective of Jihad has finally been achieved. All glory be to Allah. It won't be much longer now. Soon it will be done, Caleb thought.

### Chapter 7

##### Conference Room and Banquet Space

##### Eden II

##### Beast Back Online

M

atthews, Enil, Veronica, President Stevenson, Cardinal Mahoney, Mark Armstrong, and John were expecting Enoch’s arrival. Using Enil as an intermediary, he instructed them to gather specific key participants for an afternoon meeting. Matthews spoke to John about an extra concern related to 'The Beast'.

“John, Enoch knows that Aafre's team has successfully finished reprogramming 'The Beast'. In a matter of days, they will resume their online presence. Enil and I are working on keeping the back doors accessible to their system. True to our expectations, they came across multiple backdoors while rewriting the code. We are keeping a constant watch on their progress, day, and night. I am concerned. It's possible that they will discover and shut every open entrance I left, sealing the portal entirely. Do you have any suggestions?”

“Matthews, what you just explained is outside of my capabilities. I assume with you and Enil’s knowledge, we can keep the portal open. If you're unable to come up with a plan to undermine them, perhaps targeting their base in Belgium could be an option.”

While John and Matthews were talking, Enoch entered and immediately gave them an unexpected instruction.

“There's no need to sabotage 'The Beast'. Our focus is shifting. If possible, maintain an open portal.”

Enoch sat, picked up a clay cup, filling it with wine. After not explaining himself about ‘The Beast’ comments, John looked over at Enoch.

“Can you explain what you meant by 'another direction'?”

With an emotionless tone, Enoch leaned forward.

“John, let them bring ‘The Beast’ on-line. The time has arrived for them to fully implement ‘The Mark of the Beast.’ Every man, woman and older child needs to decide if accepting the chip is worth it. I have spent the past few years traveling the world, preaching about the dangers of Cain, the 200, and the chip. Therefore, let them bring it on-line. We will not interfere. Our worldwide network of sanctuaries and organized underground economy is available for believers everywhere. The world we know will undergo a dramatic shift in a matter of days. Challenging times lie ahead. Enforcing 'The Mark' in specific regions will prove to be highly challenging. Regrettably, possessing 'The Mark' will create a false sense of security for its users, enabling them to engage in global buying and selling. Soon, even with ’The Mark,’ a lot of what they want to buy, or sell will no longer be available, especially food and medical needs.”

“Enoch, what is your perspective in America?” President Stevenson inquired. “Credit cards, debit cards, supermarkets, gas stations, department stores, and online stores formed the backbone of their economy. How are Christians expected to survive?”

“President Stevenson, what insights have you acquired about scripture since coming here? Isn't it interesting that scripture does not mention America during the time of Tribulation?”

“No, I did not. I thought America was included in one of the other coalitions.”

“They will, but in a diminished capacity. Regrettably, the America we're familiar with is dangerously close to disappearing, as Cain's actions will plunge the nation into chaos, leading to the eradication of its government and a total economic collapse. The mighty American dollar will soon be a thing of the past. The cities will descend into chaos. America is on the verge of adopting the 'False Prophets' rules on God's identity. Freedom is about to become obsolete.”

“Enoch, why?” John inquired.

“John, the existence of western civilization needs to come to an end. There's no other option but to bring about the destruction of America. In the absence of a human rights advocate, Cain has the potential to assume control as the world's dictator, resulting in the elimination of personal rights through changes in global laws. If Cain doesn't have complete control over the masses, he and his 200 cannot fulfill the prophecy.”

“Are their intentions to bring about the destruction of America?”

“Yes John, with my help.”

“Why are you offering assistance?” questioned Stevenson.

“Fulfill the prophecy by teaching humanity a lesson they won't soon forget. Other reasons are to separate the wheat from the chaff. Everything that is meant to occur is written in the Bible. Shortly after my departure, many people will plead for their own demise. Death will not come.”

After Enoch's challenging descriptions, John noticed that everyone seemed stunned. Mark Armstrong was finally addressed by Enoch, ending the silence in the room.

“How far along are we in finishing the sanctuaries we've been working on?”

“Globally, we have reached a total of 800. We've fulfilled your request by assigning a Jewish Elder from the Jews for Jesus' Organization to each outpost. If well-managed, they have the ability to sustain themselves in their communes for over five years. The sites are located in the areas you mentioned as being protected from natural disasters.”

“Can you provide an update on the situation of Christians in cities who refuse the 'Mark of the Beast'?”

“We've established an underground railroad-style initiative for feeding and providing medical aid in major urban areas. The level of scrutiny they will face will far exceed that of the communes we established in caves.”

“Well done, Armstrong, for the work accomplished by your team. Continue making adjustments for as long as possible.”

“Thank you for your confidence in our work.”

“Thank you. I need to ask for one more thing. In a matter of days, the world will transition to a new currency known as 'The Mark of the Beast' which utilizes a chip. Will the introduction of the new currency render our accounts worthless?”

“You're right, that's correct. Your money will become useless when 'The Beast' comes back online. That's why we're spending money as fast as possible.”

Matthews gestured with his hand to get Armstrong's attention.

“Matthews, is there something you would like to say?” Mark asked.

“Armstrong, we may be able to set up a few dummy people, and whatever cash is left over, we can convert to the Beast's electronic fund system.”

“Is there a likelihood of it being successful? Mark asked.

“Absolutely, as long as we create our accounts before they transition to their new system.”

“Enil, are you in agreement with Matthews?” Enoch questioned. “Is there a chance that we can make Matthews' plan happen?”

“Indeed, we have the ability. Accounts for the underground railroads have already been established by us. We utilized shell corporations and the internet to convert some money. The administration of credits will be entrusted to elders in select communities worldwide.”

“Okay, I'll entrust it to you.”

Enoch got up from his seat and began speaking to John.

“John, I'll be traveling to Central Africa for a short while to preach. Once I'm back, arrange a global broadcast to discuss the impact of Cain's actions on America and England. We will also let the world know the horrors God is about to unleash. The Trumpets are sounding.”

“When you're prepared, inform us. We will wait for your command. What actions is Cain taking against England and America?”

“Later John. Let's have a conversation about this topic when I come back. In just a few days, you'll have multiple critical stories to cover, and everyone will be eager for details. Prepare yourself. Enil, allow Cain and Aafre to release 'The Beast.'“

Enil respectfully bowed while speaking to Enoch in ancient Hebrew. Enil later provided a translation of his statement.

“In accordance with God's desires.”

### Chapter 8

##### Glacier National Park Interior

##### 30 Miles West of Goat Haunt

##### Sanctuary

B

enjamin, an elder from the Jewish community, was given the responsibility of caring for this flock of Christians by Elijah. Richard Stankus, the charismatic preacher, was one of the individuals included in Ben's charge. Many members of his congregation from Oklahoma who sought sanctuary, were willing to make the journey to escape “The Mark” and the impending chaos in cities. In the spring of last year, they made the trek to where they currently were based on Enochs direction. Together, they initiated the construction of living spaces for 4,000 people. It was tough to be in such an isolated location. The last outpost, Goat Haunt, was located 30 miles east of Waterton Township's nearest point, near its lake.

At the mouth of the cave, the cold was biting, registering 11 degrees on the thermometer. The cold in Israel was not as extreme as this. Over time, Ben became more accustomed to the unfamiliar surroundings. It didn't take long for him to discover that dressing appropriately made the cold temperatures more manageable. When there was no wind blowing, the cave's interior temperature rose to a comfortable 66 degrees. Hearing someone approaching him, he glanced back into the cave as Richard appeared from the cave's opening.

“Benjamin, are you stepping out for some fresh air?” Richard Stankus asked, as he pounded his gloved hands together keeping them warm.

“Yes, that's correct. I thought we should check the antennas. We have to clear away the snow that fell last night. The Eden II broadcast had static interference. I was letting my mind wander as I thought about our situation before climbing up to our antennas.”

“Allow me to assist you.”

“I’d like the company and your help.”

Following the snow-covered trail from the cave, Richard and Ben walked to their antennas while continuing their conversation.

“We received a communication from Eden II,” Richard said. “The last supplies we need will be sent tomorrow by them. The shipment contains medical supplies, as well as an additional diesel generator and 2,000 gallons of diesel fuel. A delivery helicopter is scheduled to arrive at 8 a.m.”

“Do we rely heavily on our generators?”

“No, we're sticking to a schedule and conserving fuel. We are getting the necessary power from our solar panel array. Luckily, the weather has been sunny. Since it snowed last night, we'll have to send a crew to clear off the panels.”

“I trust you to take care of that chore. Regarding another matter, what is your opinion on our group's adaptation to cave living compared to living in a house?”

“Considering they gave up their electronic toys, smartphones, computers, and appliances… they are fine. The majority are filled with the joy of Christ, looking forward to His swift return. It aids them in dealing with the challenges of living in the late 1800s.”

“Our pilgrimage has only just begun. It's been just a few months. We must remain vigilant for any signs of disagreement. A few individuals can easily disrupt the peace in our community.”

“I grasp the need to be cautious of those who may prove to be problematic. We promptly handle any complaints from a few disgruntled individuals. They're only humans, after all. At times, they express dissatisfaction and moan. We strive to keep it at a minimum.”

“How are things going with the hydroponic plant farm?”

“Very well. We're currently consuming it because our fall harvest is almost depleted. In the coming year, we plan to increase crop cultivation near the smaller valley. This will guarantee that we will have enough stock for the following winter. We won't have to rely on the hydroponic farm as heavily if we follow this approach. Another positive aspect is that the hand pump showers provide unlimited water, ensuring cleanliness and good health for everyone. Only three individuals in our infirmary are currently ill. That's great news!”

“I've heard that schools are performing well. Is that true?”

“Yes, and don't forget about the adult classes. People are occupied with work all the time. Provides minimal opportunity for boredom.”

“It brings me joy to see our group doing well. I have some fresh news to share with you. Another 1,000 can be expected to join us in the spring. Is it possible for us to make arrangements for them?”

“Dealing with a larger number of individuals could pose a difficulty. Nevertheless, Christians are always resourceful. We anticipated the possibility of additional refugees arriving. In order to support expansion, we are digging out the rear of the cave. Enlarging smaller tunnels has increased accessibility to other parts of the lower areas. By expanding our workforce, we can create more usable space and accommodate more individuals. It's possible that one of the rock walls leads to another series of caves. The challenge we face is obtaining sufficient timber to strengthen the cave roofs. Cutting what we need will be made easier once spring arrives.”

“I trust that you will find a way to make more room. Carry on with your tasks and make preparations for constructing more space.”

“Ben, I have other news for you. Enoch suggested that vacationers won't visit the lake like before. Chaos will soon engulf the United States. Traveling for leisure or pleasure won't be an option anymore, like it used to be. The operations of park personnel, game wardens, and communication to remote areas will come to a halt. The operations of Glacier Park will come to an end, and it will close permanently. With their closing, we can increase the number of people fishing in the lake next spring without getting caught. Additionally, we can broaden our hunt for meat.”

“Do you have any idea what could cause America to descend into chaos? Are ‘The Trumpets’ we have been studying in Revelation soon to occur?”

“No specifics. Enoch only told me we are to watch Eden II’s broadcasts. Through John, we will discover the future of countless people in the U.S. and elsewhere.”

Ben and Richard reached the collection of antennas and satellite dishes at the peak of a hill, offering an unobstructed view. As expected, the equipment was hidden beneath multiple inches of snow. They each had a turn shoveling, digging, and scraping. It took 30 minutes to remove 10 feet of snow from the area. Following their completion, Ben recommended showing appreciation to God.

“We should pray to God here and express gratitude for our safety and the well-being of those we look after.”

Their prayer was led by Richard. After expressing their gratitude to the Lord, they began walking down the pathway. After a few steps, Richard had more news to share with Ben.

“Enoch informed me prior to our arrival that the lakes and nearby land would provide abundant fishing and hunting opportunities during our time in the mountains. At the moment, there are 50 people engaged in ice fishing in the upper part of the lake. Numerous mountain goats, elk, and smaller animals have been discovered by our hunters. Additionally, we took down a massive grizzly bear that strayed from its hibernation zone. Everyone receives six ounces of meat per day from this supply. There are also our chickens in the cave. With the help of artificial light and enriched grain, we maintain a steady source of eggs and protein.”

“We're in a good place. I am confident that God will meet our needs. According to Psalm 91, verse one, he has always protected those who have faith in Jesus, which I believe applies to us.”

“He that dwelleth in the secret place of the Most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty. We live under his grace and protection.”

### Chapter 9

##### State of the Union

##### Washington, DC

##### Chips, Guns, Aliens

A

fter the announcer's standard greeting, Brad began speaking. “Good evening, America. I'm Brad Williams, anchor for THE Network News, reporting live from Washington DC. Tonight, we bring you the State of the Union speech from our rebuilt Nation's Capital. Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan will join me as co-anchors for tonight's report.”

“We can expect President Cain to deliver his inaugural State of the Union address in a few minutes. We understand Cain will name his new Vice President tonight. This was delayed because of the terrorist acts committed by the Witnesses, Enoch, and Elijah. This evening, we'll discover the person who will take the second-in-command position.”

“At the same time, there is a joint session taking place in the House of Commons in Great Britain. They're staying up late just to watch President Cain give his speech. Following that, Great Britain's Prime Minister Richard Weingart will declare a fresh alliance linking America and Europe. A delayed broadcast of Prime Minister Weingart's speech to Parliament will be televised. This will occur after the Republicans finish their rebuttal. Senator Ashad Reid, of North Carolina, will comment on behalf of the Republicans.”

“Behind me, we have live video. You can see the chamber filling up with dignitaries. The guest list includes several state governors and all congressional members, even those who haven't permanently returned to DC after the hurricanes closed our capital.”

“There are rumors from reliable sources, Brad,” Nancy interjected. “Cain will announce Jamal Jones, presently Director of Homeland Security, as the new Vice President.”

“I heard the same rumor, Nancy. Despite the job's stress, he has performed admirably, ensuring our safety during our most vulnerable moments. Jamal has the approval of the majority of Americans. Choosing him would be an excellent decision.”

Catherine cut in.

“The Speaker of the House has made an entrance, and the Justices are currently being seated. We're almost at the point where Cain will enter the chamber.”

“Catherine, explain to our viewers why we have a temporary Speaker,” Brad suggested.

“Roland Davies from Ohio is serving as the substitute Speaker. Due to Martial Law and the temporary closure of Washington, the current Democratic majority has not conducted an election for the position. The office of Speaker has been unoccupied since Cain assumed power. For tonight’s ceremonies, Roland is filling the position of Speaker.”

“Additionally, Brad, we understand President Cain will announce a coalition with several other countries, working together to create a new United Nations,” Nancy said. “This new organization will be within the newly built city named after the famous Babylonian city in Mesopotamia.”

“You are correct. The construction of New Babylon is almost finished. The new city’s location by the Euphrates River is exactly where it was built in the 18th century BC, before the Common Era. My understanding is that they included the ruins in the design. Don't miss out on our special two-hour city tour next week, happening during the world leaders' inaugural meeting. The meeting will take place in the newly built Nebuchadnezzar II tower, made of brass and glass, as a tribute to him. Nebuchadnezzar is believed to have built the Hanging Gardens of Babylon, which are considered one of the Seven Wonders of the Ancient World. The gardens were constructed by him for his wife, Amyitis, who was homesick.”

“Brad, I've noticed that a lot of cabinet members and directors are missing tonight,” Catherine commented.

“We received a press release late from the organizers informing us that some cabinet members won't be present at Cain's speech tonight. The release states,” as Brad read from the teleprompter, “at a working lunch meeting at the White House, those who ate the tuna sushi became ill with food poisoning. This included FBI Director Schmidt, Secretary of State Bill Krasner, with a few others. They have given us reassurance that they are in the process of recovering. They will be tuning in to watch Cain's speech remotely.”

“Cain is entering the House Chamber,” Catherine exclaimed with joy! “Let’s watch!”

With a booming voice, the Sargent of Arms announced Cain's entry into the chamber.

“Mr. Speaker, let me present the President of the United States, Robert Cain.”

As Cain made his way to the podium, the cameras shifted to the chamber and captured the long walk down the aisle, with the Secret Service by his side and him shaking hands with well-wishers.

“The applause is mostly coming from the Democrats,” Brad commented. “In silence, the Republicans stand and fix their gaze straight ahead.”

“I'm not surprised, Brad,” Catherine chimed in. “The Republicans have a strong aversion towards Cain. They opposed him becoming Speaker and disagreed with his efforts to involve America in a global government. Numerous Republican leaders have alleged corruption within Cain's administration. The conservative voices have been suppressed. Both the House and the Senate have a majority in favor of Cain. Since Enoch's attempt to destroy the United States, no legislation has been proposed or approved due to Martial Law.”

“Cain is at the podium. Let's listen,” Nancy said.

Applause persisted from the Democrats and nearly all other attendees. Cain raised his hands to silence the crowd.

“Mr. Speaker, and I should say, Vice President. Unfortunately, I have not appointed a Vice President. Tonight, let's disregard protocol and invite Jamal Jones, Director of Homeland Security, to sit in the Vice President's seat. I am pleased to announce that Jamal will be our new Vice President.”

A burst of applause filled the chamber. Jamal, who had a front-row seat, came up and shook hands with Cain, as he sat in the Vice President's chair. Cain clapped in unison with the chamber, a smile on his face.

“Since we have a Vice President,” Cain stated, “I will begin again.”

After the applause subsided, Cain repeated his opening greeting.

“Mr. Speaker, Roland Davies, Vice President, Jamal Jones, colleagues, Justices of the Supreme Court, and guests. I stand before you to present The State of the Union.”

The applause resumed, with the Republicans choosing to abstain. After the applause subsided, Cain began his speech.

“The resolve of America remains unshaken by the terrorists, Enoch, and Elijah. They made an attempt to demolish our Capital. DC has been reconstructed with unwavering American determination. Today, Washington, DC, is open and ready to do business.”

The majority of people stood up and clapped in response to his statement.

“We are delighted to announce that the labor force from Middle Eastern countries has successfully restored Houston. 90 percent of our refineries, shipping channels, and 100 percent of the power grid are now fully restored. Houston has been resettled by 80 percent of our displaced American refugees.”

The applause was lacking because of the discontent over the refugee exchange with Israel. Cain ignored the snub and continued.

“After a span of 5,000 years, peace has been attained in Southeast Asia, Northern Africa, and the Middle East. Wars are nonexistent in all regions. World peace has eluded Earth since the dawn of humanity. In the span of our lives, we have accomplished peace.”

Cain's words elicited a massive round of applause, with both sides standing up to cheer.

“We achieved peace by giving people who were oppressed for thousands of years the opportunity to live in western countries and give back to the Jews their claimed land. I am thankful to the leaders of Europe, Asia, and Israel for decisively resolving this enduring problem that has plagued humanity since the beginning. Peace has been achieved worldwide. By our aid, Israel has acquired a seven-year safety assurance and agreed to a non-aggression pact, trading it for their ancestral territory.”

“Within the next three months, New Babylon will be opening its doors. The original site of ancient Babylon in Iraq is where this city of the world is being constructed. We collaborated with 300 countries without holding back on expenses. We have not only relocated the United Nations from New York City, but we are also constructing a community for their families. This community consists of 200,000 homes and 300 schools providing education from kindergarten to college master’s degrees. Babylon is a community designed for the future.”

“Babylon will be the home for our leaders. They will work in harmony together to supply jobs, security, and a quality of life for the entire world. Our accomplishment has become reality, thanks to major corporations and governments who invested in our future. A green future awaits Babylon as it becomes an eco-friendly city. Its design incorporates solar energy, windmill technology, recycling, electric mass transportation, and electric cars. Babylon serves as the blueprint for our future cultures. Our goal is to duplicate these cities on a global scale!”

The applause was so loud that it was deafening. After the clapping died down and everyone sat back down, Cain resumed speaking.

“Attention, individuals involved in drug dealing, theft, kidnapping, robbery, burglary, and other criminal activities. Pay close attention to my next statement. Your business is now closed in America, Mexico, Europe, Asia, Africa, and all other nations. Your illicit cash will vanish permanently!”

With a smile, Cain paused and looked left to right, making eye contact with several of his enemies in the audience.

“All world currencies, including the American dollar, Russian ruble, Japanese yen, English pound, and the euro, will become obsolete in ninety days. A new business model is being established through the cooperation of all governments. The issues we encountered with our chip systems in the past have been fixed. The new system will be operational again starting tomorrow.”

“Printed currency will become obsolete for buying or selling in just 90 days. It is mandatory for individuals in any country to visit their financial institution and hand over all currency and coins. The programmed chip will be inserted into either your hand or forehead. They will credit your accounts for the amounts you return.”

“Currency is essential for drug dealers to conduct their business. Without cash, criminals will be compelled to utilize our chip pay systems. Under this system, they are obligated to declare their income. Criminals have conducted business using only cash. Those pawning stolen goods will not… be paid without the system. We will easily identify those who are unemployed but have large credit balances in their chip accounts. Once we suspect something is suspicious, we will apprehend them, seize their assets, and bring them to justice. Your business is once again shut down. The concept of crime as we know it will be eradicated!”

A wave of applause swept across the floor.

“I acknowledge that my colleagues on the opposite side of the political spectrum are displeased with our implemented policies. I encourage them to be open-minded and contribute to a stronger America and world where peace prevails.”

The Democrats' applause was overwhelming.

“Moving on to the second amendment, it's the next item on my agenda. We anticipate that both the NRA and Republicans will vigorously oppose my upcoming statement, but it is necessary. I will be issuing an executive order tomorrow that will make owning a firearm a felony. The order will allow reimbursement of what the firearm is worth, times three. Once your firearm is handed in, credits will be deposited into your account. This encompasses ammunition as well.”

“I understand that this order will be challenged in court for its constitutionality. When the case reaches the Supreme Court, I have confidence that we will be able to eliminate guns from our streets.”

The chamber burst into applause once again. The Republicans joined together in a chant of “No, No, No!”

Cain let the banter play out while he carried on with his speech.

“I didn't expect my gun control comment to resonate with the Republicans. Despite attempts over the past few decades, our country's turmoil prevented its implementation. Yet, many other countries have already gotten rid of firearms. There are cities where police officers can perform their duties without carrying guns. We must once again put an end to personal firearms. I've ordered the Attorney General to implement this order without delay.”

Cain's dictatorial role was met with a hushed silence in the chamber. As they prepared for their next move, Cain could read the intentions of prominent Republicans on their faces. He kept going in a different direction.

“Another issue we are struggling with are these Witnesses, Enoch, and Elijah. They are wreaking havoc in our world and remaining concealed. The aliens possess both cunning and intelligence. Both of them wield supernatural abilities that originate from another dimension! Allow my words to resonate with you. They have returned to the future. They come from a time when the world was under the control of 'The Watchers'. Ancient writings from every religion describe these extraterrestrial beings. These Watchers are from the real Satan and his followers!”

“Enoch and Elijah have returned to wreak havoc on our planet once more. It is imperative that we come together to oppose them. We need to resist their powers by promoting global unity. We must put an end to their ability to create chaos in our world. The Witnesses are just one aspect of our problem. Our true concern lies with those who follow them. They will soon be joined by others of their kind. Their sole objective is to enslave and bring destruction upon the Earth.”

“Governments worldwide have been concealing knowledge about extraterrestrial existence. By executive order, I am releasing government files about UFOs and Area 51. The worldwide press will report that UFOs are indeed real. The existence of extraterrestrial life is a reality. They seek to enslave and annihilate life on Earth, similar to their near success 4,000 years ago.”

Cain's unusual declarations caused such silence in the chamber that even the sound of a pin dropping would have been audible during his pause. He carried on, disregarding the silence.

“We need to prepare humanity for their invasion of our world. I can tell from your silence that many of you believe I'm insane. Trust me, that is not the situation. The senders of Enoch and Elijah are en route. Enoch and Elijah pose a threat to both your families and our existence.”

“In the near future, we will release the Vatican archives and UFO files to substantiate my claims. According to them, they are the ones leading the Christians. Rest assured, they are not the individuals they make themselves out to be. Soon, you will hear the truth from Peter, the 2nd of the Catholic Church. I implore each nation and its population to come together in opposition to these alien terrorists and their cohort of traitors. You're aware of their identity. There's a long list of things that need attention. Never before has the world witnessed such unprecedented destruction caused by these terrorists. It is only by working together that we can resist these invaders. It is certain that further destruction and pain will take place. It's crucial for each individual to join forces and unite as a collective. Earth is both our planet and our home. This is our last chance to defeat them... Let's make the right choice. My intention is to seek congressional approval for the creation of a department known as Alien Identification.”

Cain fell silent as he noticed that the majority of the audience were only staring at him blankly. He became aware that they failed to grasp the concept. He recognized the significance of ensuring the masses comprehended his message as he kept on.

“I understand that many people are reminded of movies and TV shows featuring invasions or attempts to take over our world. What's happening today is not a cinematic production. The control of these aliens is a serious matter. The public will finally be informed about what has truly transpired on Earth from the very beginning. What they will find is they are watching us, so we need to be prepared.”

“The existence of a god is true. His place of residence has always been Earth. In his acceptance speech, Pope Peter the 2nd reiterated the message to you. At the appropriate moment, we will unveil the identity of this individual. Until then, we must stand strong in our fight against the alien invaders Enoch and Elijah under the leadership of the Watchers.”

“As a nation and a participant in the global community, we have many goals to achieve. Together, let's unite to repair not just America, but also our world, aiming for lasting peace and prosperity worldwide. I appreciate the time and attention you've given me tonight.”

As Cain turned, the applause meekly began anew, and he proceeded to shake the hands of both the Speaker and the Vice President. Next, Cain began to exit the chamber, accompanied by the Speaker and Jamal.

### Chapter 10

##### Colonel Caleb Schmitt, Commander

##### The Capitol, Washington DC.

##### Massacre and Betrayal

C

aleb barked to his commandos, “Cain has left the chamber. It’s time to go.”. The distant sound of explosions reached their ears as the backup generators of the Capitol were obliterated. The entire complex is now without electricity due to a power cut. The Capitol building was plunged into complete darkness. As the assassins made their way up the steps, they engaged in a firefight with the Capitol Police. The doors were breached, as they swiftly made their way from the foyer to the Chamber in under fifteen seconds.

Numerous individuals made efforts to flee the Chamber. Upon reaching the doors, they were immediately met with a barrage of bullets, falling dead, and preventing others from fleeing. His troops opened fire on those trying to flee and pursued those who sought shelter behind seats. Equipped with night vision goggles, they were able to navigate through the pitch darkness without any issues. Caleb understood their importance. As a result of their extensive training, his men are flawlessly taking out targets with head shots. The slaughter was carried out in a sequential manner. They had complete control over the entire building. Their cleanup process was done in a mere three minutes.

The next wave of assassins, organized by Caleb, arrived. In accordance with their rehearsal, they proceeded through the corridors of Congress. They didn't hesitate to shoot anyone who showed any signs of movement. Office doors were violently kicked open while Congressional assistants, gophers, and government associates were being assassinated.

Upon the conclusion of twelve minutes of chaos, they made their way through the hallways and back into the Chamber. In the event that someone was still moving or experiencing pain, they were shot in the head. They were able to hear a shot now and then, with silence filling the gaps. Caleb rounded up his team for the final walkthrough. He rapidly evaluated that their mission had been successful.

They followed their exit plan, leaving the building's Chamber and office areas, and headed towards the Rotunda. Upon reaching the Rotunda's corner, they were greeted by Capitol Police, FBI agents, and military personnel. The assassins were targeted with a barrage of gunfire. There was supposed to be no resistance at this entrance. They were double-crossed. They were misled by Caleb's contact. They were at a disadvantage in terms of weapons. Within seconds, his entire command was ruthlessly taken down.

Caleb received a blow to his chest. As he sagged to the floor, he thought to himself, ‘we were not heroes.’ He quietly sought solace in Allah, praying for his soul. In his dying moments, he could barely make out the distant sirens before fading into oblivion.

### Chapter 11

##### Brad Williams Reporting

##### Washington, DC

##### Aftermath

T

heir monitors lost the video feed as they went offline. There was no streaming video coming from the Chamber, where the Republicans were expected to give their rebuttal.

“Brad, what happened?” Catherine asked in panic! “What happened to our video feed? Where did it disappear to?”

Brad summoned Lester Marks, his assistant producer, to join him at the anchor desk.

“Lester, do you have any notion of what might have transpired? Has Eden II done something once more?”

“No Brad. The video feed from the Capitol seems to have experienced a power problem, as far as we can determine. Without any forewarning, the video suddenly came to a halt.”

As Lester was talking, a page rushed over, waving a piece of paper and shouting.

“Enoch and Elijah murdered all the people present at the State of the Union speech. Everyone who attended the simultaneous meeting at the House of Commons was also assassinated!”

Brad snatched the release from the page. During their panic, they were still broadcasting live, and their mics were hot. He quickly read through the press release by Reuters. Brad directed his gaze upwards at the cameras.

“According to this piece of paper from Reuters News Services, Enoch is in America. According to their sources, Enoch headed a squad of commandos and successfully eliminated the government of the United States. According to initial reports, there are no survivors... This memo contains... oh my god... let me read it to you.”

“In a deadly attack, the entire government in Great Britain was killed by a group of commandos under Elijah's leadership.”

A different runner approached the anchor desk and delivered another document. Brad quickly glanced over it, then cheerfully disclosed what it contained.

“Both President Cain and Vice President Jamal Jones are out of harm's way. According to the paper, the assassins involved in the massacre were killed by the Capitol police, FBI, and Secret Service. Despite that, Enoch and Elijah are believed to have evaded capture. The only individuals who survived the massacre in England are the King and the Prime Minister. Everyone else has died. The terrorist commandos attempting to escape the House of Commons were annihilated. There is confirmation that Elijah and Enoch are not among the deceased and are currently at large.”

“Lester says our news helicopter video feed from our affiliate in DC is coming up live,” Catherine interjected. “Our monitor is displaying the stream.”

Everyone glanced at the video feed on the monitor, capturing the Capitol area with flashing lights from ambulances, fire trucks, and police cars. Nancy included further intelligence from Sinclair news.

“The alleged assassins were killed by Capitol Police, military units, and the FBI in a hail of bullets, as verified by authorities. Furthermore, it mentions that there are no survivors. There will be an ongoing effort to identify the bodies. The news source I'm reading mentions that there were multiple assassinations in the Capitol offices. Enoch and Elijah seem to have initiated a conflict with the western world.”

Nancy's emotions were captured by the zoomed-in cameras as she struggled to maintain control. She started crying, tears rolling down her cheek. The camera shifted its view to Brad.

“We kindly ask for your understanding. It's necessary for us to have a break. We'll provide further information on tonight's tragedy shortly.”

The

First Trumpet

****

### Chapter 12

##### Broadcast Studios

##### Eden II

##### Lies And The First Trumpet

A

s Brad went on a commercial break, Enil yelled, “John, only five seconds left!” The countdown began as they took control of the airwaves from THE Network. At the anchor desk, Enoch, Elijah, and John were captured by the camera. John made a public address to the world.

“At our Eden II anchor desk, you'll find both Enoch and Elijah sitting next to me. Neither of them was in Washington or Great Britain. We've been here since the start of Cain's 'State of the Union' speech. Our evening coverage will begin by debunking the false claims about Enoch and Elijah's role in the massacre. It is now known that a significant portion of the US government and the House of Commons in Great Britain were targeted and killed. We are waiting for the death toll and a survivor's report.”

“We want to make it clear that no Christian in the world planned or carried out the senseless killing of government officials. The orchestration of this entire operation can be attributed to Cain, and the 200 Fallen demons we've been discussing. We have clearly reported who they really are. Let's hand the reins of our broadcast to Enoch.”

Enoch remained expressionless as the camera focused on him, speaking calmly, and using straightforward language.

“Your blame game, Cain, has fallen flat against me and Elijah. It will not work. Your strategy today involves eliminating the governments of America and England in an attempt to gain absolute control over civilization without facing any consequences. This action will result in negative repercussions. Unlike you, we warn Christians about the impending disaster when God is ready to take action, so they can prepare. Your accomplishments amount to nothing more than the destruction of the structure, laws, and lives of numerous innocent lawmakers.”

“Cain, you're well-acquainted with the prophecy. Jesus has initiated the breaking of the first Seal in Heaven, signifying the end of our truce. You may be the conqueror for the moment, but your reign won't last much longer. Your white horse and crown will be short-lived, as well as your bow of iniquity.”

“The time has come for God's punishment to start. This time, the entire world will experience the influence of the Trumpets of Heaven. You understand what I am speaking about. The First Trumpet was blown the moment you launched an attack on the leaders of the free world. In this historical era, humanity is given the opportunity to embrace Jesus Christ as the only true ruler, according to God's plan. Let the message of the First Trumpet in Revelation 8 verse 7 be heard by all people.”

Enoch quoted the verse out loud.

“The first angel sounded his trumpet, and there came hail and fire mixed with blood, and it was hurled down on the Earth. A third of the Earth was burned up, a third of the trees were burned up, and all the green grass was burned up.”

Enoch looked back at the cameras.

“There are six more Trumpets. Familiarize yourself with them and be ready. Christians and believers beware.”

Enoch took a momentary pause, showing reluctance to proceed. However, he followed through and gave the warning that everyone would dread.

“Within the next 72 hours, a series of super volcanoes will start erupting across the globe. I'll provide a name for each one. There should be a scrolling text line under this broadcast. I recommend taking note of these locations for future use.”

Enoch began reading from a list.

“Taupo Nui a tia North Island, New Zealand

Heise Volcanic Field, Yellowstone hotspot

Cerro Guacha, Sur Lípez, Bolivia

Cerro Galán, Andes Central Volcanic Zone

Atana Ignimbrite Antofagasta, Chile

Karymshina, Russia

Mount Aso Japan, Kyūshū

Campanian Ignimbrite, Italy (Naples)

Thera Santorini Caldera, Greece, (Santorini)

Baekdu Mountain, China, North Korea

Mount Samalas, Indonesia

Mount Shasta, California

Long Valley Caldera, Mammoth Mountain in California”

“Take note that the Campanian Ignimbrite is situated just 140 miles from Rome. The eruption will result in Rome being buried under a layer of ash measuring over three feet. Parts of Rome will burn, reminiscent of the era of Nero. In North America, it will cover half the country with ash and will burn. This encompasses a third of South America, Asia, Russia, and parts of Europe.”

“Due to the eruptions, the ash will be carried by the jet stream, causing a cooling effect on Earth. A cloud containing sulfur-dioxide and ash will develop and move 20 miles upward into the stratosphere. When foreign substances reach this point, they require a significant amount of time to disperse.”

“These newly formed, sunlight-absorbing clouds will spread everywhere around the globe. This will block the sun's rays and prevent them from warming the Earth. Prepare for shorter summers accompanied by colder temperatures. The growth of food, livestock, and agriculture will be influenced by this. To ensure your safety, we have compiled a list of safe zones across the globe on the Eden II website. It is recommended that you evacuate the affected areas promptly and relocate to safer zones.:

“It is time for Christians to band together and help each other. Read ‘The Word’ so you can plan by knowing what is coming next. Establish gardens within the community to ensure self-sufficiency. The distribution of food in grocery stores might disappear. No matter the consequences, stand firm and reject any attempts to chip you. If you allow yourself to be chipped, your soul will be condemned forever.”

“The 'Time of Sorrows' is now entering its first phase of torment. The sins of this world are triggering God's fury to be unleashed. The time for judgment is nearing for each and every person. Repent and request forgiveness from Jesus for your sins. Your choice will have everlasting consequences. Embrace the grace given by Jesus on the cross and have faith in His resurrection. Until His return, God encircles all believers with a protective hedge and wall.”

Enoch halted and glanced at John, indicating he was finished. He then asked Elijah to comment.

“John, there's something I want to mention. Israel, I need you to listen carefully. In your hearts, acknowledge Jesus as the Messiah. Poisoning of the water across the globe will occur with the Third Trumpet. Can you remember when Moses had to provide water for the Israelites in the desert? God made water flow from a rock. In these times, the presence of Jesus is crucial to bring water back to Israel. I assure you, if you don't accept Jesus, God will inflict suffering upon you. My purpose is to bring truth and meaning to your life. Take my words seriously, oh Israel.”

The attention of the cameras returned to John.

“Enoch, is it true that there are Seven Trumpets? John asked.

The camera homed in on Enoch and John.

“Indeed, John, there are. The first I described today. The next ones describe ships and fish being destroyed. I know the verses by heart.”

“And the second angel sounded, and as it were a magnificent mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea: and the third part of the sea became blood.”

“And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.”

“And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from Heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters.”

“And the name of the star is called Wormwood: and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.”

“And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars; so, as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.”

“And I beheld and heard an angel flying through the midst of Heaven, saying with a loud voice, Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabiters of the Earth by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the Three Angels, which are yet to sound!”

“There are 3 more Trumpets. They bring disaster, death, and sorrow to humanity. Everything you need to know is in your Bible.”

“Thank you, Enoch. These words from the Bible give people of our world a lot to think about.”

In silence, the studio reflected on what the next phase of Tribulation would bring.

“In our upcoming broadcast, guests will track ash clouds to warn you of dangerous fire and lava zones. In order to inform Christians, we will interrupt broadcasts worldwide. May God bestow blessings upon you and keep you safe.”

The Eden II logo appeared, then disappeared as televisions worldwide returned to their original broadcasting.

### Chapter 13

##### Hallway, White House Situation Room

##### Washington, DC

##### Avoiding The Truth

A

reporter from THE Network asked General Stoups, “What is the situation at the Capitol?”

“Every single one of the assassins was killed by men and women from the Capitol Police, Secret Service, military personnel, and the FBI. Tragically, most of the Senate and House members, as well as those in the Chamber and hallways, have perished. We are still in the process of checking for bodies or survivors. We're in for a night that will feel like forever. Evacuation procedures are in place at the Capitol to safeguard the President and Vice President.”

“Were Muslims responsible for the deaths?”

“We cannot definitively say. Based on our analysis of a limited number of bodies, it appears that most were of Middle Eastern descent. It is up to the FBI and CIA to provide answers about their origin, arrival, and other inquiries.”

During the Q&A session, a reporter representing The Guardian in Great Britain expressed interest by raising his hand. Stoups called on him.

“Is it assumed that all the individuals who were present at the Prime Minister's speech in England, including those from Parliament and the House of Lords, are deceased? In addition, is there any information forthcoming about the King and Prime Minister?”

“They launched a simultaneous attack on both the House of Lords and America's Congress. No further information is available to provide. We will have more information to pass on as soon as we receive it. For now, no more questions.”

The General faced a barrage of shouts from the reporters. He paid no attention to their pleas and reentered the situation room.

### Chapter 14

##### Prime Minister David Bernstein’s Office

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Allies

C

aptain John Bernstein of the IDF asked, “David, are we planning a civil alert, following the mass assassinations in America and Great Britain? America holds a significant position as one of our key allies. There's a sense of unease within me. The absence of the American Congress puts us in danger from multiple countries.”

“No, there's no need for it. Following the return of our ancestral lands by global leaders, we reached a peace agreement for the newly acquired territory. We should just observe and let history take its course. Elijah is currently heading our way. He is expected to give us additional feedback.”

“I too have an uneasy feeling concerning the issues in America,” Meyer Branlin, Director of Mossad, said. “We watched the broadcast from Eden II. Yesterday, it was mentioned that Cain eradicated his government in order to attain absolute power over the world. All of our field agents strategically placed worldwide are receiving reports that President Cain may have the backing of several nations to assume the role of a global dictator.”

There was no response from David to Meyer’s statement. He made eye contact with those present at the table. Yona Salant and Benjamin Hagen, their Chief Rabbis. John Bernstein, Commander of the IDF, Jacob Schwartz, Chief of General Staff, and soon, Elijah will join them. Thankfully, there were no attendees from the Knesset. A chaotic situation would ensue if they were present.

“David, were you listening to what I said?” Meyer asked.

“Meyer, we've already heard what you had to say. I am trying to gauge Israel’s strategy during this time, and let history unfold. Right now, my plan is to wait for Elijah and then proceed with the questioning. When it comes to matters concerning Israel, he tends to provide honest answers.”

As the door to the conference room opened, Elijah and Rabbi Cohen from The Temple Institute walked in. Taking a quick look around, Elijah positioned himself across from Meyer. Elijah's intention was to intimidate him.

“It's good to see everyone,” Robert Cohen said. “Elijah advised me to come and give an update on the progress of 'The Temple.”

“Thank you, Rabbi Cohen. We're grateful that you came,” David acknowledged. “However, we need to tend to other business. Can you quickly summarize the progress that has been made on 'The Temple'?”

“No problem, David. Maybe we can do it another time. The only reason I'm here is because Elijah asked me to come with him.”

“David,” Elijah said, “I invited him to come. Since we are meeting together, we should discuss ‘The Temple.’ Clearly, there are other matters of interest occupying your minds.”

Elijah shifted his focus to Rabbi Cohen.

“Rabbi, I humbly ask for your forgiveness for my misjudgment. Feel free to go back to 'The Temple'. I'll meet up with you later in the afternoon.”

After Rabbi Cohen exited, Elijah directed his attention towards David.

“The Temple is not something you are thinking about today. What is?”

“The demise of Congress in the United States and Great Britain's Parliament. It is worrisome to us how it affects our sovereignty.”

“Did you forget that Israel has already agreed to a peace accord with the Antichrist for the sake of your security? It was prophesied 2500 years ago that this would occur.”

“Are you referring to Daniel 9:27 of the ancient writings Elijah?” Yona interrupting asked.

“Yes Yona. These are the exact scriptures I'm talking about. Are you familiar with the passage?”

“Indeed, I am.”

From his robe, Yona produced a well-read copy of the Old Testament. Yona flipped through a couple of pages until he located the desired verse.

“I found the verse. Here it is.”

“He will confirm a covenant with many for one seven. In the middle of the seven, he will put an end to sacrifice and offering. And on a wing of ‘The Temple’ he will set up an abomination that causes desolation until the end that is decreed is poured out on him.”

Yona looked up from the book and shared his opinion on the verse.

“According to my understanding, the Antichrist will establish a seven-year peace agreement with us, only to break it halfway through. What I am saying, the Antichrist will take over ‘The Temple,’ then desecrate it.”

“The Romans fulfilled this verse, after the destruction of the ‘Second Temple’,” Rabbi Benjamin interjected tersely, with anger on his face.

“No, it has not,” Yona said. “I respectfully disagree, Rabbi Benjamin, with your interpretation.”

“Yona, what you said is false. Before destroying our ‘Second Temple,’ the Romans set up idolatry within ‘The Temple’, fulfilling the last verse in Daniel 9. This verse says, upon wings of abomination shall come one who makes desolate until the decreed destruction is poured out desolation.”

Benjamin's confident smirk revealed his belief in his strong case.

“The Romans are symbolized by the Eagle Wings. 'The Temple' was defiled by their worship of idols. 'The Temple' was destroyed by the Romans in 70 AD. Today's exile is regarded as an extension of the Roman exile, spanning over 2,000 years.”

“Two millennia,” Elijah interrupted. “What of the halfway point of the 7 years described in prophecy? The disparity between three-and-a-half years and 2,000 years is considerable. In Matthew 24:15, it clearly refers to Daniel. The passage dates back to 95 AD, a quarter of a century following the destruction of 'The Temple.' Explain that!”

Benjamin refused to let Elijah interfere, resulting in his face becoming flushed. The intensity of his anger towards the Prophet overwhelmed him. His composure was finally shattered. With a raised voice, Benjamin leaned over the table and yelled at Elijah.

“You, just like your counterfeit Jesus, are a fraud! Not long ago, you were known as Sharya, a homeless person residing in the desert, deemed by many as crazy. Now you, you claim to be a Prophet. You, Sharya, or Elijah, are not a man of God, but rather a blasphemer and a demon!”

Benjamin unfastened his robe and ripped it along the seam. The Kriah is an age-old tradition that expresses anger or sadness.

“Israel has met its demise. Anyone who dares to listen to this 'False Prophet' is signing their own death warrant.”

Benjamin hurriedly made his way to the door. Turning around, he shouted out once again.

“To hell with all of you!” he shouted, slamming the door in anger.

Following Benjamin's outburst, Elijah shook his head and made a comment.

“He will suffer greatly on the day of judgement.”

Yona made an effort to suppress his emotions. He couldn't suppress his feelings about Benjamin any longer.

“Elijah, since you arrived, Benjamin has been struggling with Israel's direction. He can't comprehend the existence of a Prophet in modern times. He is unwilling to leave his comfort zone of core beliefs found in the Word. Benjamin believes the New Testament is an abomination. The past two-plus years have left Benjamin with a lot of anger.”

“Yona, we comprehend your perspective. Unfortunately, Benjamin, like many Jews, is heading towards a one-way trip to hell. No individual can lay claim to innocence. He will either receive the good news or reject Jesus as the Messiah. This is relevant to all of you individually.”

David came between Elijah and Yona, putting a halt to their exchange.

“Elijah, we arranged this meeting to address the relationship between America and Israel. I'm uncertain about how we transitioned to another topic.”

“The problem arose because Benjamin lacks faith in prophecy. Pay attention to what I'm about to say. Israel made a pact with the Antichrist by offering you the lands of Moses and Joshua. The issue arose because of your actions. By accepting their offer, you are essentially witnessing the prophecy come true. Regarding America, they are close to being finished as a world power. All their strength is being passed to the unholy, one world government prophesied in Revelations.”

“Elijah, are you trying to say, from now on, Israel stands alone.”

“Yes, you are right, David. Similar to Moses, Abraham, and Joshua, our safety lies in God's hands, not America's. In a matter of months, Israel will be under occupation, reminiscent of Roman times. There will be no more sacrifices. The desecration of 'The Temple' will be carried out by Cain. He will declare himself as God, and everyone will be amazed by him. Like 'The Trumpets,' my words are discovered in the pages of prophecy. I'm certain you've been informed about the Antichrist through the extensive coverage from Eden II.”

“Elijah, can't we utilize our military to prevent this upcoming occupation that you mentioned?” John Bernstein asked.

“Not against the entire world. You will have to negotiate peace to stay solvent and alive. Israel will keep engaging in peace negotiations, just so you know. Nonetheless, you will survive to fight in the future. The day will arrive when Christ, the Messiah you denied, returns. Israel will join the final battle of humanity and demons against God and you. The Valley of Jezreel, also called Armageddon, is where this will happen. We should direct our question to Yona.”

“Yona, is this the way you interpret the prophecies in the New Testament and the Book of Daniel?”

“Yes, that's right, Elijah. And David… Eden II’s latest broadcast described the sounding of The Trumpets. If Enoch's statement comes true, that settles it for me. The fulfillment of scripture will occur right before our eyes.”

“Elijah, what of this ‘Trumpet’ and volcanoes erupting? Will this affect us?” Meyer asked.

“The first Trumpet has a global impact. It's important for Israel to make necessary preparations.”

“What actions should Israel take?” David inquired.

“Make sure to have enough water, food, and supplies to sustain for five years. By taking this action, you will ensure the survival of the people of Israel. The sky will be contaminated by pollution. Follow Joseph's example and prepare for the famine in Egypt, just like he did for Pharaoh. Don't forget, these eruptions will affect one third of the global population. Worldwide, millions of lives will be lost. As Jews embrace Jesus as the Messiah, Israel will shine as a symbol of hope.”

“What could be the reason for Jews converting to Christianity?” Jacob inquired. “Benjamin's words make me doubt that this will occur.”

“Jacob, I can answer your question by referencing the New Testament scripture in Revelation 7, which describes the 144,000 and their origins. 12,000 from each tribe. You can read the scriptures yourself.”

“Once The Temple is completed Elijah,” Yona asked, “will we re-institute sacrifices? I know you told us Cain, as Antichrist, will stop them when he desecrates The Temple.”

“Yes, we will. The first day will witness the High Priest of the Temple carrying out sacrifices. The Levites will soon tell you when this will occur.”

“Elijah, are you saying that Israel won't have any allies until the final day?” David inquired.

“Indeed, David, until your Savior comes back.”

### Chapter 15

##### The White House Situation Room

##### Washington DC

##### Moving Assets

J

amal Jones passed the completed documents to Cain. “Here are three Executive Orders. One for declaring a National Day of Mourning, another for extending martial law, and the last for banning firearms and ammunition ownership. All three were signed by Cain and returned to Jamal.

“Aafre is arranging a meeting for the Nine Nation Coalition at our new headquarters in Babylon, Iraq,” Cain said. “Our designated meeting place is the main United Nations building. A press release will be issued detailing the three Executive orders and our meeting with world leaders in Babylon.”

“Are you interested in organizing a press conference about the assassination of Congress and the Justices?”

“No Jamal, a press conference will not be necessary. Unprecedented chaos will be caused by the 'First Trumpet'. People will forget about the assassinations. The majority of people worldwide will be desperately trying to save themselves. The significance of politics in America will be obsolete. America's reign as a superpower will come to an end after 'God's Trumpets'. Enoch and Elijah will be held responsible for the deaths caused by volcanic eruptions.”

“I think we should promptly transfer the rest of our military personnel from American bases to different nations.”

“Great thinking, Jamal. Write a narrative illustrating the need to relocate over 200,000 soldiers. The lower 48 ports must be evacuated by the Navy. Ships can be utilized to relocate troops to safety. They should be relocated to ports in Europe, Asia, or the Mediterranean. Make sure to steer clear of ash that's falling. It is not everywhere. Chart out regions that are considered safe. Before the first eruption, make sure Bill Krasner (aka Akibeel) issues the orders for authorized personnel to be swiftly transferred worldwide. Only leave National Guard troops here in the states. The National Guard can be activated by governors under Martial Law using my Executive Order.”

“What is the situation with our stockpile of nuclear weapons?”

“They go to Iraq. A special location has been constructed to house our bombers, missiles, and nukes. The process of moving them will take a few months. It's essential that we relocate our nuclear weapons without being detected. Have NORAD moved to Babylon before the ash fall. Construction of our airbases are complete there.”

“The news is reporting that grocery stores are being overwhelmed and riots are happening. People are trying to stock up because of the ‘Trumpets.’ Should we take any action regarding this?”

“No, let them fend for themselves. America does not fall into the category of areas worth saving, unlike others. We simply require their military forces and armaments. There is nothing else that holds any importance.”

General Stoups, also known as Gadreel, entered through the door.

“President Cain, Air Force One has been fueled and is prepared for departure.”

### Chapter 16

##### Albert Meers Farm

##### Salina, Kansas

##### Ash Fall, Fears

I

t was the State Farm Bureau representative who organized the meeting. The local farmers were gathering at the Meers' farm outside Salina, Kansas, for this meeting. They used the old barn converted for local dances a few years back. The Farm Bureau believed the attendees would be more at ease meeting here, rather than at Salina's Convention Center. More than a hundred Farmers were present. They needed to get the show moving before they ran out of food and alcohol. Al took to the makeshift stage and began speaking through the portable microphone.

“Welcome, everyone, to the Meers Ranch. I hope you were satisfied with the refreshments.”

Just like always, the Meers Family arranged keg beer, chips, pretzels, and nuts. Numerous men had brought sipping whiskey and were sharing it with each other.

“We're meeting today because our Farm Bureau State Representative, Jim Reeves, wants to discuss the potential truth of Enoch's claim about the Yellowstone Cauldron eruption. To avoid stealing Jim's spotlight, I'll hand over the microphone to him.”

Al passed the microphone to Jim before taking a seat next to his wife.

“Fellow farmers of Kansas, I am Jim Reeves. As many of you are familiar with me, there's no requirement for me to provide any background information. My purpose is to discuss the eruption of the Cauldrons. Several years ago, the State of Kansas provided funding for a study on ash fall. We were aware that ash fall from Yellowstone would happen at some point. We never wanted it to happen, but we feared it might. According to USGS data, we are located within the Mesa Falls Ash Bed. Salina is on the edge of a worst-case ash fall of 39 inches, or 1,000 millimeters. It could be as low as 12 inches, or 300 millimeters. If we factor in the Long Valley Caldera eruption, my estimates could potentially double.”

Jim paused to let his words sink in before proceeding.

“No matter the amount, we will receive a direct hit from falling ash. This ash fall is going to wipe out every single crop. If ash-fall exceeds four inches, it will cause severe harm to crops, livestock, and machinery. And most certainly contaminate streams, lakes, and rivers. If the ash fall reaches its worst-case scenario of a foot or more, it will impact cars, buses, trains, and other vehicles. This will lead to the failure of our power grid.”

Someone shouted out to Jim from the crowd.

“Appears we are screwed, Jim. Hell, it ain’t worth talking about. I'm shutting down the farm, storing my belongings in the barn, and then departing. We're moving to a safe zone in our RV to escape the destruction caused by this apocalyptic ash. Sure, ain’t staying here.”

“Can’t say I blame you. Since you brought it up, have you made a reservation to guarantee your spot at an RV Park?”

“Not yet. Finding a place was not a problem when we drove down to Florida a few years ago.”

“Sir, unfortunately, I have to share what I witnessed and overheard. During my drive on the Kansas Turnpike, I encountered numerous families heading south in their RVs. I had a quick talk with some of them when we stopped at the rest area. In order to stay clear of the ash, they're heading south. It's likely that all RV Parks are filling up right now.”

Grumbling could be heard in the background. Mike was well known by everyone, and many people had the same idea until Jim rejected it.

“My purpose here isn't to bring you unwelcome information. Unfortunately, we are facing the potential destruction of our farms. Expect ash to fall continuously over the course of 30 days. Our choices are restricted, based on Enoch's predictions. Another problem we face is ensuring the survival of our neighbors. The items I have with me are survival guides for humans, livestock, and pets. Our top priority is to seal our homes and barns. The next component involves a method for clearing ashes from residential roofs, outbuildings, and barns.”

“If there were 100 millimeters of ash, a flat roof would collapse. Gardens and crops will both be affected by poison. Consuming any of this food will result in illness.”

“Jim, what's the duration we need to endure the ash fall?” Al hollered out.

“Albert, I'm glad you brought this up. The government estimates it will take approximately 30-60 days. I've researched this thoroughly and am confident in our ability to make it through. We are currently in late January, and the ash fall is expected to cease in February or early March. Once the ash settles, there's work that needs to be done.”

“Could you clarify which work you're referring to?” Another asked.

“Removing ash from roads and fields.”

“What is the strategy for accomplishing this? Where are we to put the ash?”

“Change happens when we prioritize one farm at a time. We'll bury the ash by digging holes and use the excavated soil to cover our fields. By working as a team, we can ensure we're ready for planting in spring.”

Many shook their heads while listening to this strategy. The majority of people couldn't comprehend the feasibility of his plan.

“I understand that this may be overwhelming. Survival is our main objective. I am confident that we can achieve this goal as a community. Those residing in urban areas will face extreme difficulties surviving the ash fall, unlike us. By joining forces and cooperating, we can overcome these eruptions. Questions?”

All at once, they erupted into a chorus of shouts. Al looked over to his wife, Linda, sitting beside him. He made a move to hold her hand and started whispering in her ear.

“Our first step is to head to the food warehouse and gather essential items such as flour, sugar, coffee, salt, beans, and rice. The time has arrived for us to unite our family, seal our home, and seek God's mercy.”

Linda held onto Al's hand tightly as tears streamed down her face. It was clear to them that the day of the Lord was drawing near.

### Chapter 17

##### Brian Chen’s Office, USGS HQ

##### Washington, DC

##### Earthquakes

B

rian’s worried tone as he addressed her concerned Debbie. “The Western United States, specifically Southern to Central California, is being hit by earthquakes. More precisely, Mount Shasta, Mammoth Mountain, and Yellowstone. The count we are discussing does not include reports from countries worldwide.”

“Brian, do you believe these earthquakes could be the precursor to Enoch's prophecies?”

“Absolutely. Earth movement aligns with Enoch's provided list. Reports are being received from China, Indonesia, Greece, Italy, Bolivia, Chile, Japan, the Andes, and Russia. This verifies Enoch is on the bull’s eye for accuracy.”

“I suppose Brian, we should contact Homeland Security, have them institute the emergency broadcast protocol, or EAS,” Mark suggested.

“The EAS is not technically our main objective. We supply them with data on our anticipated results. Their group decides to take over the airwaves of commercial radio and television. In numerous areas, shortwave radio could become the sole method of communication following these eruptions.”

“Considering the available data, what's the worst that could happen?” Debbie asked.

“As of now, it seems highly likely that each of these volcanoes will erupt simultaneously, according to the data. I acknowledge that it's unrealistic for multiple eruptions to take place at the same time. It's important to keep in mind that Enoch has never made a mistake. Assuming all volcanoes erupt at once, I fear air travel, our national power grid, and communications will be disrupted indefinitely. Are there any other thoughts you'd like to share? Debbie, Mark?”

“Our next move is to notify Chris Wallen, Secretary of the Interior,” Mark said. “It's now his turn to make a decision or take action. Previous studies on ash field depths and destruction for each of Enoch's predicted eruptions have already been conducted. We must deliver our information to him without delay. There is a limited window for mass evacuations. Less than 24 Hours is my guess. There is nothing else left for us to do.”

### Chapter 18

##### Cain’s Warning

##### Babylon, Iraq

##### EAS Broadcast

T

he digital header message loudly pulsated the prolonged beep three times. This instructed every broadcasting company in the United States to switch to the EAS system. President Cain went live from Babylon, Iraq, as the system came online. The message reached every radio, TV, and cell phone.

“An ash alert has been issued for the entire Western United States, including California, Washington, Chicago, and Texas, as informed by Secretary of the Interior Chris Wallen. This alert has implications for the entire country. The ash clouds will result in a complete shutdown of airline traffic globally. All aircraft, including civilian and governmental ones, have been ordered to be grounded within 12 hours. A large number of planes will be relocated to safe regions worldwide.”

“Bus, car, truck, and rail traffic will cease from the areas mentioned. Nothing west of St Louis will be accessible, except I-10, only to Baton Rouge. Nothing west of Cleveland on I-90. East Coast highways are on standby, on a warning status. These roads are to stay open to traffic. However, air traffic will not be available there. All National Parks are closed. Park personnel have been sent to safer areas.”

With hands folded, Cain made direct eye contact with the camera.

“The terrorist aliens, Enoch, and Elijah are intentionally causing this emergency and impending destruction. I want you to realize it. While they may provide alternative explanations, we recognize their responsibility. We are instituting a fugitive warrant with a reward; to hunt them and the people who associate with them at Eden II. We will find them and their sanctuary.”

“The EAS will broadcast additional emergency information nonstop until the emergency is over. Goodnight.”

Following a series of beeps, the EAS restored commercial programming.

### Chapter 19

##### John Roddenburg Reporting

##### Eden II Studios

##### Super Cauldron

A

sudden flurry of activity on the studio floor kept all on alert. John took the anchor chair with Mary Ann Sinclair and Geraldo Vasquez who both left Bear News and came to Eden II with their families two weeks ago. Everyone was pleased they arrived for John and Donald missed collaborating with their team.

John caught sight of his wife Veronica holding their baby in the shadows of the studios. The sight of her with their baby always revived John's belief in himself. He took pride in his mission of spreading truth to the world. Enil walked to the anchor desk reminding him they were nearly ready to broadcast.

“We are going live in five minutes. It's time to discuss the newscast for tonight. The announcement of the 'Trumpet' sounding is being made by Enoch and Elijah. We possess video evidence of the mass departure from the Western United States. Furthermore, live cams are available for each volcano that is expected to erupt. No reporters of course as the eruptions are too dangerous to have a live reporter on scene. Tahit will be the sole broadcaster reporting live from Salt Lake City. Questions?”

“No, not yet. Our reporting will be moment by moment.”

“John, I have one more thing to mention. Your broadcast will have a 3-minute delay. This enables us to broadcast with translated voiceovers in different languages. We are interrupting every commercial broadcast worldwide with a recording time of 2-3 hours. John, if there is any indication that our override might be violated, I will notify you to halt broadcasting. Are we on the same page?”

“I understand Enil, I will leave it up to your discretion.”

Leaning over and giggling, Mary Ann spoke to John.

“Are we truly taking priority over global news coverage?”

“Yes, we override every channel every day. Whenever we feel like it, we can make it happen. Ownership of the airwaves belongs to us. We're glad to have you back reporting the truth!”

Enil caught John’s attention as the countdown started at 30 seconds. The LED display counted 5, 4, 3, 2, 1.

“It's time for Eden II News, live with John Roddenburg, Geraldo Vazquez, and Mary Ann Sinclair, broadcasting from our Eden II Newsroom. Our focus tonight will be on the 'First Trumpet' mentioned in Revelation by John. Please welcome our host, John Roddenburg.”

“Good evening. Today's transmission is reaching a worldwide audience and being translated into 64 languages. We will be covering the first Trumpet sounding from Heaven, bringing the wrath of God upon the Earth. It's a challenging day for people all over the world. A day foretold by Daniel, Matthew, and John over 2,000 years ago.”

“Enoch and Elijah, God’s Witnesses will testify to us by explaining the first ‘Trumpet’. In addition to Mary Ann and Geraldo, our meteorologist, Chester, will also be with us. We have cams set up worldwide at each volcano defined by Enoch. Soon, we will have a firsthand encounter with the awe-inspiring power of God. We are watching the mass exodus from areas the United States Department of Interior consider at risk. Joining us live from Salt Lake City, Utah is Tahit. Tahit, take it away.”

Tahit was displayed on the screen.

“John, I'm standing right in front of the capitol building in Salt Lake City. Lawmakers, police, and emergency management teams have gathered here since 5:00 a.m. when the USGS and the Department of Interior announced the possible eruption of Yellowstone, Long Valley Cauldron, Mount Shasta, and Mammoth Mountain. The government officials have yet to issue a press statement regarding their emergency plans. At the moment, the only information we have is the mayor's statement, which mentions a plan following the ash fall. What the government’s plan is, we have not been told.”

“Tahit, is there a significant exodus from the city and its surroundings?”

“Yes John, there is. Can you divide the viewers' screen, please? Using my tablet, I can provide a description of highway events. We possess video footage of the I-80 and I-15 interchange. You can see on I-80 East to the I-15 South ramp, cars are grid locked. The highways are currently facing severe congestion. There are RVs, cars, and trucks all mixed together. At an entrance ramp on I-80, we had a conversation with one of them. This is the interview with them.”

“Greetings, I'm Tahit representing Eden II television. Is it okay if I ask you a couple of questions?”

“Yes, I suppose so. Can we say something really quick?”

“Of course.”

“We want to tell John our family watches Eden II every day of the week.”

“Where are you planning to go with your family in the RV?”

“We will head south to I-70 and then go east to find safer places.”

“Has anyone advised you to leave Salt Lake City, or is this an independent decision?”

“No one told us to leave. We made our decision as soon as Enoch on Eden II stated the ‘First Trumpet’ is close to sounding. Being Christians, our family is knowledgeable about and studies Daniel and Revelation. Our church is helping us prepare by teaching us about the 'Tribulation' and what to expect.”

“How much time has passed since you left your house?”

“Three hours ago. Currently we are stuck in this horrible traffic. It's evident that we've hardly made any movement.”

“While we've been talking, it's become apparent that no one is advancing.”

“Traffic is like this everywhere. We set off from home, made a pit stop for gas, and ended up in a long line. After an hour, we finally reached this on-ramp, covering a distance of 5 miles. It's been almost 30 minutes since we got on this access ramp.”

“It seems that many people have opted for the same course of action.”

“Yes, it appears so. I hope we can get south of the city before the volcanoes erupt. We have knowledge that they will, just like Enoch mentioned. Our faith in God is unwavering. Enoch's statements align perfectly with the prophecies in the Bible.”

“Are you aware the government has closed the highways east and west to traffic at the Mississippi River?”

“Yes, we heard. According to truckers, closures will be avoided until the volcanoes erupt and ash begins to fall. We are hoping we make it past Denver, then go east or south before they shut everything down completely.”

“Be careful; we hope you start moving soon. What were your names?”

“I'm Jack,” he said with a smile, introducing his wife Marilyn and the Okabee family.

“Be safe, and God Bless.”

The screen shifted back to Tahit.

“We filmed this interview an hour ago. We are tracking their progress. The Okabee’s are now on the south bound lanes of I-15.”

“John, while we were watching the video, the governor issued a press release to us. Let me provide a brief overview of her statement. There are shelters available for those in need of assistance. Diesel tankers are strategically positioned to ensure continuous generator operation for government, hospitals, and shelters. There's no point in heading south since there are no accommodations available. They cautioned that the highways are completely congested heading towards Denver and beyond.”

“It's a tough situation for those who find themselves stranded on the highways, Tahit.”

“Yes, I agree John. Unfortunately for most people, there is no way out of threatened cities. The situation many face is to stay in place and pray for protection.”

“I agree Tahit. Stay there if you can. We will be getting back to you.”

“Thanks John. This is Tahit reporting live from the capital of Utah.”

John turned toward Mary Ann.

“Are Denver and Salt Lake City being monitored for severe ash fall?”

“Yes John. We know in Salt Lake City, I-15 south to I-70 is jammed packed. The good news for now is that I-70 to Denver is still open. People can still head east. But no traffic will be allowed headed west.”

A runner handed John a note. After John scanned the note, he turned back to the cameras.

“We are required to stop our coverage for a few moments. The EAS has requested all broadcasting stations to sign off. They will be broadcasting emergency information once again.

The Eden II Logo displayed as they released their jamming of other broadcasts.

### Chapter 20

##### Meeting Room, Nebuchadnezzar II Tower

##### Babylon, Iraq

##### Destroy, Destroy, Destroy

E

den II broke away as the EAS started broadcasting the annoying beeps everyone hated. “This is the Emergency Broadcast System. In cooperation with local broadcasters, we are declaring a national disaster. This warning takes immediate effect. The advisory extends from St. Louis to Duluth, covering all areas of the Western United States. All traffic, except emergency vehicles, will be banned on all highways going east, north, and south in less than 12 hours.”

“I-10 is scheduled to be closed from Santa Monica to El Paso, Texas. I-40 from Barstow to St Louis will be inaccessible. I-70 from St Louis to Utah will be closed. I-80 from Davenport, Iowa to Sacramento California will be closed. I-90 from Lacrosse, Wisconsin, to Seattle, Washington will be closed. All intersecting Highways of East-West routes going North, and South will be closed. Stay tuned for additional information as it becomes available.”

The annoying sign off finally ended on the EAS. Cain muted his monitor and addressed General Stoups.

“The Council of the Gods, along with Enoch, are making a mess of our world.”

“Yes, Cain, that is correct. We know the prophecies, so let them cause havoc. We cannot intervene and stop their actions. Our primary aim is to concentrate our efforts on readying humanity for the ultimate showdown. We need humans to assist us in winning our last battle. This final conflict is where it shall begin or end for us.”

“Causing catastrophes is how they work,” Sir Jordan added. “Destroy, destroy, and destroy more. Let’s see… the flood, the Tower, Sodom, and Gomorrah. The list goes on forever.”

“We will defeat them soon, father. We have planned our strategy for an incredibly extended duration. Now, we possess the same weapons, they do.”

“I'm putting my faith in your judgment, Cain, and hoping that you are right. If we lose this battle, we will be bound for another thousand years.”

“Enough of the negative comments. We need to prepare for tomorrow’s meeting with our member states to address this mess caused by Enoch. As you, we know more destruction is coming. It makes no difference to me what they choose to do. We have our own objectives. The first part of our agenda is to institute one world government. Once completed, we have every resource we need. And… as my father told God, His creation is corrupt, and we will soon prove it. Let them die. We only need a handful of them to help us. The death of a few billion individuals will not alter the significance of our cause.”

“The decision is yours, Cain,” Lucifer commented beaming with pride. “Our destiny is in your hands. The Divine Son verses my son. Jesus vs. Cain. It's solely in your hands to determine what happens next.”

### Chapter 21

##### Extended Report of the First Trumpet

##### Eden II Studios

##### 2.5 billion

T

he announcer began; “People of the world, welcome to Eden II News. Here is our host, John Roddenburg.”

“Welcome back to our continued coverage of the first Trumpet. Eden II has overridden your local broadcasts on cable news stations worldwide, broadcasting in 64 languages. As you just heard from the United States EAS system, they stated in less than 12 hours, major highways are closing to traffic, except emergency vehicles. This means to those who live near affected areas, you need to prepare for the possibility of several feet of ash. We have a list of what not to do, to survive within the confines of your homes. We will follow with directions to secure your home when we finish speaking to Enoch and Elijah.”

The camera zoomed in on them at the anchor desk.

“I am not sure which one of you to ask. Why does God want to bring about such extensive devastation?”

Enoch's deep, commanding voice resonated with authority as he spoke.

“The easiest way to explain it, John, in simple human terms, is ‘The Trumpets’ and their destruction is God's wake-up call. Over the span of mankind from Adam till today, Prophets have warned of God’s wrath on several occasions. In past times, a majority of people doubted God’s prophecies would occur. Humanity had ignored their Creator and acted as they pleased. Many examples show man's turn from God to follow Satan. Man prefers to think of himself as a god, doing what he pleases in sin, rather than listen to God's words. Many are aware of the tale about the flood. God looked down upon the Earth and saw that His creation had become corrupted. In my sermon in Kansas City, I shared how mankind turned away from God. Matthew chapter 24 details this. Listen…”

“But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be. For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying, and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark. And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so, shall also the coming of the Son of Man be.”

Enoch looked up at John.

“Let me now refer to Genesis chapter 6.”

“And God saw that the wickedness of man was great on the Earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that He had made man on the Earth, and it grieved His heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the Earth, both man, beast, the creeping thing, the fowls of the air. I regret I have made them.”

Enoch lifted his eyes from his Bible.

“Realize John, God uses nature to judge humankind. For example, look at Exodus. A miracle for the Jews, and devastation for the Egyptians. God used the waters of the Red Sea to save the Israelites, then destroyed the Egyptian army. The flood, simply put, was God cleansing the Earth of sin. Evil was destroyed in humanity. Only Noah, his family, and the animal kingdom were given a fresh start on Earth. We know God promised to never destroy the world again with a flood. Unlike Noah's era, the period of 'Tribulation' will not eradicate humanity. A large number of evil people will survive, along with a considerable number of survivors being Christians. Each will experience His judgment. This is the time of God's wrath.”

“Today, every person can see prophecy being fulfilled. It would seem humanity would recognize His power over everything, kneel and accept Jesus Christ as their Savior. Christians who die during 'The Age of Sorrows' are sealed with Christ forever. However, many will not. They will be angry at God, and believe the lies told by the Antichrist and his demons. Now John, you comprehend why we are at the time God promised would occur.”

“Still, Enoch, I find it difficult to accept, yet I understand what you just said.”

“Maybe John,” Elijah interjected, “you are feeling like Noah and his family as they heard the cries of people outside the ark drowning as the flood waters rose.”

“I suppose Noah, as I do, feels sadness.” I need to put aside my sorrow, though. Our job is to warn people and offer the salvation of Christ.”

“You are correct, John,” Elijah acknowledged. “Let me add this to our conversation. This is for Jews living within Israel. Listen to what is being shared, accept Jesus Christ, read the scriptures, make the right choice. Or as in the days of Baal, I will smite those who turn others away with lies.”

“I assume, you have issues with the elders of Israel?” John asked.

“Yes, I have. I will take care of it when I return to Israel.”

“Do you want to explain to us why you have concerns?”

“No, not at this time.”

John turned back to Enoch.

“Let’s address the ‘First Trumpet’. When will it occur?”

“The eruptions will begin with many earthquakes around the volcanoes.”

“Let me clarify. When will the first volcanoes erupt? Do you think all the volcanoes will erupt together?”

Enoch looked at the row of clocks on the wall displaying the different time zones. Enoch turned back toward John.

“The first will be Yellowstone. Prior to the volcanic explosion, there will be a 9.0 earthquake at the main Cauldron. The eruption will start immediately after. The other locations worldwide will ignite within minutes of each other. God will ignite the fires of hell from the depths. This will begin within the next five minutes.”

The studio fell into a hushed silence. Geraldo, who spoke with an air of prophecy, broke the silence.

“Finally,” he whispered, a mixture of excitement and nerves in his voice, “the time has come.”

Geraldo suggested they pay attention to their cams placed around the world.

“We need to display our on-line cams at Yellowstone on the monitor. Let the world see firsthand God’s power over the Earth.”

As pre-planned, viewers could see live feeds, split into five sections, four squares on one-half of the screen, the anchor desk on the other side.

“We have four cams above the cauldron,” Mary Anne said. “We are not sure how long our remote cams can transmit. Cams are present in other global locations. We will show them to our viewers later.”

As soon as Mary Ann finished speaking, one of their cams jerked in an upward motion, as if pushed up from the ground. A bright yellow and reddish light pulsated like the sun rising on a cloudless morning. The flash was brief, the cams signal ceased within seconds.

“The bright light we saw briefly from our cams is Yellowstone erupting,” John said.

“It seems similar to a nuclear blast,” Geraldo added.

John, not even knowing he said it, while looking at the image of the Cauldron, shared a verse from the Bible.

“Woe is to man on Earth. The day has come.”

At the anchor desk, they composed themselves as data started rolling in from news services worldwide. John started reading the posts on-air as soon as Eden II received the dispatches.

“Officials report that Mount Shasta has exploded alongside the Long Valley Caldera. Our reports state the entire top of Mammoth Mountain has exploded from one gigantic blast. Other reports we are receiving from volcanoes erupting around the world describe similar situations. Each of the mountains Enoch listed has erupted with worst-case scenarios.”

After reporting the contents of the dispatches, John asked Chester to display the graphics he prepared.

“Can we track the ash flow around the world? I understand you have charts to share with us.”

“Indeed, I do, John. Ash heights and umbrella sizes are not yet available from Yellowstone. However, we have an idea of the seriousness of the eruption. The earthquake was at 9.0, as Enoch predicted. It may be assumed ash and burning coals were sent up into the sky approximately 25 kilometers, or around 15 miles. From the reports we have, it appears the eruptions are called an umbrella blast. We estimate the wind field generated by the blast to have generated close to 24 kilometers per hour, or 15 miles per hour winds. The umbrella itself could be as wide as 2,000 kilometers, or 1,250 miles.”

“USGS maps suggest the ash will fall all the way to New York and cities on the East Coast. However, they will only receive a few inches. What is unknown is what may happen with the entire Western United States erupting. There are no known situations describing what may occur. We have several eruptions in the Western United States alone. Couple this with other countries experiencing similar eruptions, you have the makings of a ‘Nuclear Winter.’ In other words, there may not be a summer within the Northern Hemisphere this year.”

“What about hot ash falling and burning coals?”

“What we have now is ash cover simulation. Considering the volcanoes continue to erupt, for 30 days, ash-fall will be anywhere from 1,500 millimeters or 60 inches as a worst-case scenario, or 4 millimeters or close to half of an inch in New York. Fiery ash will extend up to a 500-mile area in each direction, from each eruption. This will include Billings, Denver, and Salt Lake City. The Long Valley volcanic activity may be as devastating as Yellowstone. Other eruptions will have similar effects on the entire West Coast of America.”

“Any idea of deaths caused by these volcanoes?”

“John, there is no way for us to know. The multiple eruptions are unprecedented. But with what we are seeing, death and injury counts will be staggering. Some today, some tomorrow and some months later, from the far-reaching effects of the ash-cloud. I can tell you, the American food basket will not have a harvest this year. Ash and embers will destroy most of our crops in the ground in the Northern Hemisphere. There is no situation to replant crops until sometime after the ash stops falling. It may take at least two years for fields to be cleared.”

Elijah leaned in toward John to get his attention.

“Sorry to interrupt, but even though we cannot provide you with an exact count of deaths, the scriptures are an excellent guide. They state one third of the Earth will burn. Therefore, one may assume the casualty count will be a similar percentage.”

“Are you saying, Elijah, these volcanoes are going to result in the death of 2.5 billion people?”

“Yes, but not all at once. Eventually, many will perish due to this Trumpet.”

John noticed Enil was holding up a printed sign for Tahit.

“Thank you, Elijah, for your comments. We have Tahit reporting at ground zero in Salt Lake City. She has an update.”

The monitor showed Tahit standing at the same place as her earlier report from Salt Lake City.

“Hello Tahit, I understand you have some new information for us.”

“Yes John. A few moments ago, we experienced the tremor from Yellowstone. There is minor structural damage to buildings near where I am standing. We do not have any video to share with our viewers.”

“Can you see anything in the sky, Tahit?”

“Not really John. The north sky appears to be hazy. Nothing has fallen from the sky so far.”

As soon as she said this, small flakes of material were seen lightly falling from the sky on their monitor.

“The ash is arriving,” Tahit said. “We need to sign off immediately. Hot embers follow these little white flakes.”

“I agree Tahit, go seek shelter. We will hear from you soon.”

“This is Tahit reporting from Salt Lake City, Utah.”

Their monitor went blank as John turned to Chester.

“Do you think Salt Lake City will burn?”

“Yes, and the forest surrounding it. Forest fires are not something we talked about. However, the entire area will soon be ablaze.”

“Will Denver burn?” Mary Ann asked.

“Based on the information available, it is probable that this will occur. Denver will suffer the same fate as Salt Lake City. Once again, we expect fires everywhere from the hot ash. More so, in our western states.”

“Chester,” John asked, “What of California?”

“John, I hate to say this, but I would assume most of Southern California will burn to the ground, from the Mammoth, Shasta Mountains and the Long Valley Caldera eruptions along with San Diego.”

Eden II's monitor came back to life, presenting updated graphics. They were receiving satellite pictures from NASA. The images portrayed the eruption of Yellowstone as seen from space. The visuals appeared as Geraldo had mentioned earlier, as if a nuclear bomb had exploded. The photographs displayed a worst-case scenario for humankind. This ‘Trumpet’ was a mass killer of humanity. Chester proceeded to explain the satellite images. He used a world map to show where each image originated from.

The Eden II team kept on broadcasting the news, as updates were handed to them from various news services. They continued their coverage of the ‘First Trumpet’ until Enil motioned for them to stop. Emergency broadcasting, EAS, was taking over the airwaves again.

### Chapter 22

##### Glacier National Park Sanctuary

##### Goat Haunt, MT

##### Damage Assessment

T

he sanctuary’s TV Monitor went out immediately after the Yellowstone blast. The reverberation traveled deep into the bowels of the mountain. Many were terrified when the shaking started. Several ran from the cavern in fear. Unsecured items tumbled to the floor as rocks and dust plummeted from the top of the cave to the lower chambers. Shortwave radio picked up signals from EAS. It kept repeating the same warning over and over. Richard sought out other frequencies like HAM radio operators transmitting out of North Dakota seeking information.

“Benjamin, the very first Trumpet has sounded!” Richard said with glee.

“You are correct. This 'Trumpet' will be the very first one. We are to endure five more Trumpets till the last one when Christ returns, along with the ‘Seven Bowls.’ You seem pleased the first one has arrived. However, our priority is to go through our cave and complete a damage check. We received a violent shaking when Yellowstone erupted.”

“Already have a crew checking support timbers, electrical wiring, and plumbing. I think what we felt here was the equivalent of a 5.0 earthquake. Our inspections so far have only resulted in dust and rocks from the ceilings of the cave.”

“Fingers crossed.”

“I am not worried. Enoch sent us here to this location for a reason. We will be safe. Keep your faith strong. We are under God’s protection.”

Richard's walkie talkie beeper went off. Benjamin, after hearing half the conversation, understood one of the cave's rooms collapsed. Fortunately, there were no injuries. Richard told them to shore up the damaged areas and clean up the mess.

Richard clicked off his unit and turned toward Ben.

“Did Enoch say we would get ash fall or embers?”

“Yes, he did. However, he said it would not be as bad as other places. Maybe an inch or two.”

“We need to keep everyone inside.”

“Yes, for a few days, until we can assess the air quality.”

“I will call a meeting of our flock. We will give thanks to God for our safety, then tell them what the situation is.”

### Chapter 23

##### THE Network’s Temporary Studios

##### Chicago, Illinois

##### Frustration

B

rad sat frustrated in his studio. The biggest story of his lifetime slipped through his fingers. Eden II with John Roddenburg was controlling the airwaves and there was nothing anyone could do to change it. Joe Biggman was sitting with Brad, trying to console him.

“Calm down Brad. They are about to conclude their broadcast. When they finish, you are up. We have a separate tale to tell our audience. Have patience. There will be an opportunity for you to express it.”

“I understand, boss, but the waiting is frustrating. Why can’t we stop them?”

“We are trying. As you are aware, Aafre’s head tech guy defected. We think Matthews figured out how they overrode the system and kept us off the air. He escaped to Eden II before telling us how to stop it. Now Brad, put this aside. You have a job to do.”

Joe leaned back and lit a cigarette. He started blowing smoke rings toward the lighting.

“Your job, Brad, is informing everyone who these Witnesses Enoch and Elijah really are. They are extraterrestrial beings, sent here to cause havoc on Earth. This Christian nonsense is just that. They are from another world. They have been here before. They intend to destroy us to the point where people feel helpless against them. You need to use your persuasive powers to let the world know the truth. You see Brad, there is a god. However, he is not the god of the Jews, or Christians. Our god lives here on Earth. He has been present on our planet since the beginning of man's time. This deity will lead us into battle when they arrive. Battling these messengers, Witnesses or terrorists is nothing compared to the real battle we need to win. We have no choice. We have to defeat them. Failure will result in the aliens taking over the Earth. They will then kill or bind most of us.”

“What you are saying seems ridiculous, Joe. You sound as if you are reading a movie script or a comic book. I find it hard to believe your concept is true.”

“It is true, Brad. When Cain releases the government's UFO files, you will believe it as I do. Now, put this negative conversation aside. Get ready, I have provided you with the script. The world must oppose these Witnesses. It is your job to make this happen. Help us convince the world to prepare for an invasion. So, you know, the Christians have part of it right. The ultimate battle will occur in the Valley of Jezreel in Armageddon. Slowly, we will, as the ‘Democratic Party’ did, tell people what they want to hear, then keep at it. Eventually, the story will be believed, regardless of its truth. They will willingly join our side and worship Earth’s real god.”

“Ok, I will bite. Who is the real god?”

“In time, Brad, he will reveal himself.”

Their Producer Jonathon Langer came over to the news desk.

“Eden II has signed off. After the government’s EAS announcement, you are on.”

Brad straightened up in his anchor chair as Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan joined him. The studio lights came on as Johnathon pointed to the countdown clock. It said five seconds. Brad watched it count down as THE Network went live as the announcer began.

“People of the world, you are watching THE Network News, live from Chicago with your hosts Brad Williams, Catherine Kwan, and Nancy Arms. Now here is Brad.”

“Welcome to our Broadcast. Today is an incredibly sad day for our world. As many of you are aware, the alien terrorists, Enoch, and Elijah, have somehow managed to wake-up nature with their attempt to destroy large parts of our globe.”

“The other day during the State of The Union Speech, President Cain stated he was aware these people were aliens. The governments of the world have been keeping secret UFO activity. Cain told us they would release all classified extraterrestrial files to the public. Cain warned us there will come a day when the real battle occurs. Cain states Enoch and Elijah are a precursor of others who will attempt to destroy Earth.”

“Our country, our world, is seeing destruction on a scale never seen. Today’s broadcast is going to cover volcanic eruptions presently active within the United States. We have interviews with those fearing for their lives. We start with our correspondent, Len Maxwell, in Bakersfield, California. Len is close to the Long Valley Cauldron and Mammoth Mountain, which recently erupted.”

Brad turned toward their monitor.

“Len, are you there?”

“Yes Brad. I am reporting live in Central Park in downtown Bakersfield, California. As you can see, I have on a surgeon’s mask. The ash has started to fall in the Bakersfield area, we assume, coming from Mammoth Mountain. The peak was a popular skiing area, only 275 miles away.”

“Did you feel an earthquake prior to the blast in Bakersfield?”

“Definitely Brad. When the eruption occurred, Bakersfield shook from a 5.8 earthquake. Afterwards, from the ground we could see the sky light up as Mammoth Mountain erupted 275 miles away.”

“Do we have a preliminary damage report?”

“From the earthquake, a few unsecured items fell off shelves, nothing of any consequence. No structural damages reported so far. The true terror is scorching embers raining down. The light stuff we are getting is a precursor of hot ash with burning fragments.”

“When are the hot embers to arrive?”

“We are not sure. Something could occur anytime.”

As Len was speaking, Brad heard sirens in the background. The cameraperson was pointing his camera up at the north sky. The horizon was dark with an orange tint to it. The cameraperson focused back on Len, who was worried about the ash fall.

“Brad, I must run. The atmosphere has just turned a bright red and appears to be burning.”

With the camera operator still focused on Len, the sky was ablaze as thousands of embers began descending into the park. The videographer showed the hot embers falling like a hailstorm as Len began screaming. The last they saw of Len was him running away. The camera captured his clothing, catching on fire. Then a solid mass of hot, glowing embers fell from the sky. The camera fell from the operator’s hands to the ground. The viewers could see the embers collecting around the lens as the camera went blank. In a panic, Brad shouted at the monitor.

“Len… Len… Len…”

Nancy gently put her hand on Brad’s forearm.

“Len and his videographer are gone. No one could have survived what we just witnessed in Bakersfield.”

The entire studio was dead quiet. Brad slowly gained back his professional composure after seeing his correspondent and cameraperson burn to death caused by the firestorm captured on camera. Almost whispering, he said his goodbyes.

“You were a good man, Len. You were reporting until the last moment.”

Nancy saw Brad having difficulty and stepped in to help.

“Brad, this is occurring around the globe. The firestorms not only killed Len, but many others. Innocent people are dying horrible deaths, and those responsible are Enoch and Elijah. We will be right back after this commercial.”

### Chapter 24

##### PM David Bernstein’s Office

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Proof

D

avid’s inner circle was watching Eden II. When they concluded, THE Network in America showed the death of their correspondent occurring live. Yona was among those present, along with Meyer and David. They were speechless. The rabbi broke the silence.

“David, the prophecies of John have come true. Elijah is right, Jesus is the Messiah. We need to help Elijah convince Israel to accept him, or Yahweh will surely punish us.”

David leaned back in his chair. David, who had spent a lifetime learning Jewish history and the Torah, believed that Jesus was a Prophet who people put to death. He was told Jesus was not the Son of God, nor did He ascend to Heaven. David believed in God and the Word, not who Jesus really is. Actual proof now exists from the New Testament Prophets. David now led a country in the middle of prophecy being unveiled before their very eyes, from Daniel to John’s writings. He responded with a question.

“Yona, what suggestions can you share with us?”

“David, you are the leader of Israel. Israel plays a huge role in ‘The Time of Sorrows.’ You must make a bold move and proclaim to Israel your belief, by willingly accepting Jesus as Lord.”

“Put Christ as the Messiah aside momentarily. What of our other Chief Rabbi, Benjamin? He will fight me or anyone else who declares Jesus is the Chosen One.”

In true Yona fashion, he nervously spoke without pausing.

“I don’t believe Rabbi Benjamin will be with us much longer. Read the story of Baal. Elijah took the lives of the doubting priests. Today, Elijah informed us that he plans to repeat his actions in Baal to prove his point. This will include elders who refuse to accept that Jesus is the Messiah. I am sure they will meet their demise before the Antichrist slays Elijah. According to the prophecy, their deaths will take place on the streets of Jerusalem.”

“Are we sure, Yona, we are not being misled? Maybe Elijah and Enoch are from our adversary? Could they impersonate our enemy?”

“David, you need to have a conversation with God. Only God can show you the truth.”

“I cannot talk to God. A conversation with God is a one-way conversation. He never answers me.”

“He will, David. Just give him a chance.”

Meyer jumped into the conversation.

“David, remember when Elijah and I had issues? When my wife and my son were in danger. I talked to God that day. It was at that moment; I knew Elijah was a true Prophet of God. Therefore, I believe in Jesus. David, you know me. I did not even believe in God. Give him the chance, and God will speak to you.”

“I pray He does… for the sake of our country.”

### Chapter 25

##### Day 2 of the Ash Cloud

##### Meeting, Nebuchadnezzar II Tower

##### Babylon, Iraq

##### Cutting Up The Pie

S

everal world leaders were in attendance to hear Aafre Waldger speak. Cain introduced him to those assembled.

“Gentlemen, let me introduce our speaker today, Aafre Waldger.”

There was light applause as Aafre stood and walked to the front of the meeting room and began addressing the group.

“It's delightful to be here amidst global leaders. What an honor! We have sent out a press release to every one of your nations. It says we gathered here quickly because airports globally are closing. It also states that we have assembled to produce a plan to deal with the carnage caused by the aliens Enoch and Elijah. Because of the worldwide no-fly issue, we will use this time together effectively. This gives us time to assess our situation. Your staffs came with you, with key members of your governments. This will allow you to monitor your regions from here. Fortunately, we have been able to establish a secure location that is shielded from the ash fall, allowing us to be well positioned for safety. There is absolutely no chance of Iraq being affected by an ash-cloud.”

“We start by assessing the issue of destroying America. Today we learned several key cities burned to the ground. The casualty list is growing as we speak. Prior to the devastation, we relocated the majority of America's armed forces out of the United States. We only left the National Guard and a few military administrators. We also moved and secured the nation's tactical weapons. They were relocated here to the desert and other strategic areas. By moving America’s assets, personnel and equipment, the other so-called Trumpets will not affect them.”

“Knowing what is coming, we need to produce a plan to minimize damage to the infrastructure of our nations. Not just one country, but all… our countries.”

Aafre clicked on a visual display of the spheres and countries' positions he drew up a few years back.

“These ten spheres of influence represent the world. Many of you see how the countries are laid out. I will put up the other slide, showing the details.”

Aafre displayed his first slide.

1. **North America Region**

USA, Canada, Mexico, Central America, Caribbean, Atlantic Islands, Greenland, Iceland, Pacific Islands, Taiwan, Hainan, Philippines

1. **Soviet Union or Russia**

Persia, Mongolia, Manchuria, Finland, Albania, Yugoslavia, Austria, and other Baltic states

1. **South America Region**

All countries of South America

1. **The Union of African Republics**

All the African Nations, other than noted

1. **The Arabian Federated Republics**

Iran, Saudi Arabia, Iraq, Syria, Kuwait, Egypt, Jordan, Turkey

1. **The Federated Republics of India**

India, Pakistán, Nepal, Bhutan, Bangladesh, Birma (Myanmar)

1. **The United Republic of China**

China, Korea, Vietnam, Laos, Cambodia, Thailand, Malaya, Japan

1. **The Scandinavia Region**

Norway, Sweden, Denmark

1. **United Europe**

Germany, France, Switzerland, Spain, Portugal, Italy, Greece

1. **The British Commonwealth of Nations**

Great Britain, Australia, New Zealand, Sri Lanka, Madagascar, Indonesia

“These ten spheres have voting rights. Ten Votes. All other nations will be assigned regionally to them. This is similar to what the UN had with the five-member security council. Babylon will be the tiebreaker. You may notice this division is like the end of World War II, areas of control. This allocation of influence revives the Roman Empire on steroids.”

“Considering our situation, coupled with the destruction from this Trumpet and the ones to follow, we are planning to notify the world of our intentions.”

Vladimir Leshev, President of Russia, the demon Shamsiel, stood.

“What of countries who balk at joining us voluntarily?”

Aafre laughed before he answered.

“Depending on the size of their country, we will either replace their leadership as we did in America or destroy them. A small nuclear device is sufficient.”

“Aafre, what are your thoughts on America?” Cain asked. “The eastern seaboard and Atlantic side of the nation are intact. The people residing in the northeastern region of the country are known for their boisterous nature.”

“Keep Martial Law in place. I am confident the next 'Trumpets' will bring an end to the east coast. Roaming gangs will soon take control of New York. People will have limited access to food or supplies. Many who can are leaving. Numerous upper-class Americans have contacted me and are moving to Europe or here.”

“Since you brought this up Cain, and knowing New York, Chicago, Detroit, and western cities are collapsing, we have brought THE Network here to vie with Eden II. Soon, only two news networks will exist. Eden II and THE Network. Other stations will provide entertainment, and other nonsense. Several Hollywood studios have already moved to Babylon. We need them to continue to produce movies like comic book thrillers, which depict world domination by aliens. We have been underwriting Hollywood for almost a full century, preparing people’s minds for an invasion from outer space.”

George Schmidt, Prime Minister of Germany, the demon Turel, stood.

“Aafre, France is an issue. It is crucial that we deal with them quickly. The countries we have under our control are Germany, England, Russia, China, Pakistan, Italy, the United States, Iran. It is essential for us to have Spain and France join us.”

“George, we can soon include Japan in the list. Tkuya Koto, the demon Ertael, will soon take over the government there. At the bilateral talks in India, we intend to include them as well. Any others we will deal with, as necessary.”

Jamal Jones, the demon Penemue, stood.

“What are our plans concerning India? They are a nuclear power. Are you sure they will be the tenth voting country to join us?”

“First off Jamal, we out gun them ten to one with nuclear weapons. They are aware of it. Nevertheless, the survival of India's economy is dependent on the global community. Similar to other countries in the Middle East, they will conform once they perceive the imminent consequences. It is time for us to assert our dominance. Our discussion will commence by engaging with countries that presently maintain diplomatic relations, excluding those absent from this gathering. Initiate the persuasion process to encourage their participation in our 'One World Government'. Those leaders who refuse to comply will be dealt with accordingly. If determined to be essential, World War III will have a duration of just one day.”

### Chapter 26

##### Day 5 of the Ash Cloud at the Meers Farm

##### Salina, Kansas

##### Visitors

A

l looked out his window as he woke. The manual windup grandfather’s clock said 8 a.m. The sky was still pitch-black outside. Usually at this hour, even in January, it should be slightly brighter. Today, only a dim glow illuminated the sky, as ash steadily descended to the ground. It was freezing out. Al got dressed. He needed to go measure the ash. Keeping the soot from accumulating on roofs and barns was crucial. Yesterday, fourteen inches fell. It took half the day to clear the debris off the roofs. Breathing was difficult without a mask. Being outside was like sitting next to a smoky fire.

“Albert, are you up?” Linda asked from the bathroom.

“Yes, I am, and we need to wake-up our kids too. There is a lot to accomplish outside today.”

“I will start breakfast.”

“Thanks hon, I will put the coffee on. Going out to the barn and feed the animals. I will be back soon.”

From the wall, Al grabbed his cowboy hat. The wide brim of the hat helped keep ash off his face and neck. He donned on a surgical mask left over from the Covid outbreak years ago, before going outside.

After the meeting with Jim, he and his family relocated the heavy machinery out of the barn. They covered their farm equipment and trucks with tarps. They moved the four pigs and chicken coop inside the building with the other livestock.

Al rapidly opened the barn door and shut it to keep the ash from entering. The creatures started making sounds to let him know they were hungry. Fortunately, they had two silos on the farm. They were full of winter wheat and corn, harvested and not sold prior to the volcanoes. A plentiful supply of grains should be available for the animals to devour.

He first inspected the poultry enclosure. Plenty of chicken eggs today. Al grabbed a bucket, then picked up fourteen eggs. Picking up a five-gallon feed bucket full of corn, he spread it around the floor by the chicken coop. They were hungry as they started pecking at the corn. Chickens are easy to care for. Water, maize, and grain are all it took.

Al went over to the makeshift pig sty. It smelled. It was up to one of the boys to clean it up today. Having it inside was a burden, but necessary. He threw yesterday’s garbage into the pen, along with oats and corn cobs.

Next, he poured feed into the troughs for the two milk cows they owned. He checked their water and added some, using a hand pump. As the cows were eating, Al sat on a stool and began milking them. Their two milk-producing animals gave them three gallons a day.

His next chore was to do a site inventory of supplies. They had close to 400 gallons of diesel fuel, and 200 gallons of gas. They were only running the generator to charge up the batteries in their recreational vehicle and heat the water once a day. They were using the RV’s refrigerator instead of the kitchen’s. There was no electrical power. It ran off propane, of which they had 200 gallons remaining in the tank. The RV was alongside the house with a tarp over it. He and Linda went to the Food Warehouse right after the meeting with Jim, so they were stocked well with coffee, flour, sugar, salt, pepper, spices, beans, and rice.

The family listened to a rechargeable battery powered shortwave radio to hear the news. Other cities, including Denver to the west, were uncontrollable. The majority of Denver was destroyed by fire. Al was concerned urban areas from cities out west, traveling east, would come. They were only four miles from a main highway. Their security was a concern. However, they had several rifles and two handguns, with plenty of ammunition. The volcanoes, with their destruction of civilization, turned the clock back to the untamed west. News reports stated gangs were roaming the streets of Denver in search of supplies and valuables. People are desperate everywhere in the cities, it seemed.

Al finished milking, went to the separator, and poured the milk in. He was also concerned about their water supply. They lived on well water and the ash could pollute the aquifer. They must pray for God's protection of the aquatic resource. No water meant death to everyone. He remembered the leftover cheesecloth from another project. He could use the fabric to make a water filter, assuming the water became tainted. Al heard his wife’s unmistakable voice, then his oldest son loudly arguing with a stranger. Al ran out of the barn toward the house. As Al entered the rear entrance, he heard his son talking to someone.

“We can’t help. So, y’all need to move on down the road.”

At his front door, Al noticed a man, woman, and two small children.

“Who are these people, Roy?”

“They are from Denver. The wife says they left just before the ash started falling. They ran out of gas about a mile down the road. They walked here through the ash.”

Al sized them up. Al assessed their appearance as nice enough. However, they were dirty from the soot. They sure were unprepared to escape the ash. They had no breathing masks or head coverings. Al decided on a course of action.

“Roy, let these folks in. Come on in. Roy, have them sit at the dining table.

Roy reluctantly guided them into the kitchen. Once they were seated, Linda assumed control.

“Take your coats off. The ash is dangerous. I will put them outside for now.”

They gave their jackets to Linda. She opened the back door and set them down on a bench under the covered patio. She got two coffee cups from the cabinet and set them on the table.

“Would you like some coffee?”

The woman smiled at her through her tears. Linda poured coffee into the two mugs. The man and lady eagerly accepted the warm drink. Linda went out to the RV refrigerator and brought back a container of milk. She poured out two cold fresh glasses of milk for their young children. Al refilled his coffee cup and sat looking over at their guests. After sizing them up, he spoke to them in a friendly tone.

“My name is Al, and this is Linda, who happens to be my spouse, and Roy is my oldest son. What are your names and what is your story?”

With a deep breath, the man started sharing, his words carrying a sense of passion and conviction.

“I am Dr. Steven Johnson, a veterinarian. My wife Patty, son Jarred and daughter Toby. We left Denver four days ago. We have family near Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania. We planned to go there to wait out the destruction.

He took a long sip of his coffee.

“The traffic on I-70 is bumper to bumper. It took us two days to get to Goodland. The snowplows were trying to remove the ash from the highway. The plows kept breaking down. We were able to get gas from a Goodland station. We waited in line for three hours and they only gave us five gallons. We got back on the highway. Our gas gauge warned us we were empty. We took the first Salina exit, looking for gas. All the stations were closed. We prayed something would be open somewhere around town. We ended up on a two-lane highway, drove a couple of miles, then our car died. The ash was falling steadily. We had some snacks and food in our cooler. However, after two days, it was all gone. We were dirty, cold, and hungry.”

“Patty and I talked. It would not solve our problem if we sat in the car and did nothing. We would probably die. We got out of the vehicle with our children. After walking for two hours, we ended up here. This is our adventure to date.”

Al leaned back as he scrutinized their family. Doc is obviously a successful veterinarian. His wife’s ring and their clothing were expensive. His skills may be an asset, considering their situation. Could they be trusted, was the question. He made a decision.

“Doc, why don’t you and your family take a shower? You should get this ash off your bodies. Afterwards, we can have breakfast together. My wife Linda will fetch you some clean clothes. We have our families with us and there may be apparel which fits your children. I can offer you one of my outfits until we can tow your car to the house.”

Patty spoke as she teared up.

“Praise God, and you, Al, and Linda. Thank you.

Linda took Patty and their kids upstairs to the bathroom. Al sat across from Roy and Doc. Roy started to say something, and he stopped him using a hand signal he recognized from growing up.

“Roy, for some reason, God sent these people here. That is all there is to it. I decided we are going to help them.

Roy understood not to dispute his father's decisions. Roy, Doc, and Al sat at the table looking at one another, sizing the other up.

### Chapter 27

##### Day 5 of the Ash Cloud

##### St Luke’s Memorial Hospital

##### Denver, CO

##### Hopeless

A

Nurse told Dr. Caruso, a National Guard Lieutenant would like to speak with her. Not knowing what he wanted, she walked out into the corridor from the emergency room area. Individuals were lying on the floor and leaning against the walls, filling the hallway. She could hear their muffled cries of pain they were experiencing. The overload of emergencies taxed their infrastructure, and the situation was no longer manageable. St Luke’s was the biggest medical facility in Denver, with 680 beds and 1,400 physicians on staff. However, only 300 were present today. The hospital reached capacity two hours after the embers and ash started falling throughout the entire Denver region. The facility was overwhelmed by a wave of people. Their injuries were burns and breathing issues. The city was on fire, as the forests were on fire in the mountains. The destruction, fires and smoke were Hell on Earth.

Dr. Caruso walked to the uniformed officer dressed in fatigues, with a military issued breathing mask over his head. She introduced herself.

“Hello, I am Dr. Caruso. How may I help you?”

“Pleasure to meet you Doctor, let me introduce myself. I am Lieutenant Bosley of the National Guard. My job is to oversee maintaining order for your hospital. Several hundred people are trying to get medical help outside. We are holding them back. We are aware your hospital is full and cannot accept any new patients.”

“Unfortunately, we agree with you, Lieutenant. We are struggling to keep up with the demand. We are totally out of medical supplies. There are no drugs for pain or burns. Our burn unit is overwhelmed. All the beds are taken. We have people lying in the hallways hoping for treatment.”

“Maybe we can help. First off, we have resolved your issues with the emergency generator. We erected tents around the units to help keep ash out of the filtration system. I know you have had intermittent blackouts. Your filters caused your issues with the generator clogging up, restricting the air flow. This should help.”

“Thank you, we appreciate it.”

“On a brighter note, we have three truckloads of medical supplies. Our commanding officer sent out patrols to find pharmacies not burned to the ground. We found several we could raid. I am not sure what we have. We just threw behind the counter prescription medicines, over-the-counter drugs and other items from the shelves into trash bags. Your staff will need to sort through the contents.”

“That’s great Lieutenant, thank you.”

“I will have this stuff brought in. Where should we put the bags?”

“Stack the parcels past the front of the emergency room door. It's inside and not accessible by unauthorized persons.”

“Will do. We still have a problem with people outside waiting. What options do we have? Most came from the neighboring expressways. Many of them can barely breathe. Their cars stopped running on the highways, caused by ash clogged air filters. We estimate we have over 82,000 individuals stranded on the freeways. The gridlock goes for miles and miles. Many are choking to death.”

“How are you able to drive your trucks? I understand cars and vehicles break down quickly from the ash fall.”

“It’s difficult. We can only travel five miles, then stop, shut down our engines, pull out the filters and clean them. It allows us to drive for a few more minutes. Then we repeat the process. Tedious, but it works.”

The Lieutenant with a somber tone, added a disturbing statement.

“We have many people who have died. Do you have any space for them?”

“Our morgue is full. The temperature outside is only eighteen degrees. I suggest you find an area to place them. Unfortunately, Lieutenant, anyone breathing without a filter will soon die. The fine particles mixed with the air are like tiny pieces of glass. These particles, when they get into the lungs, start cutting the fibers from simply inhaling. This causes bleeding in the lungs, followed by spitting up blood. Shortly after, their lungs fill with blood as the person dies from suffocation. For the past few days, I have tried to help over a thousand people. We give them a pain killer and let them die.”

The lieutenant’s heart softened after hearing the Doctor’s matter-of-fact statement. He looked back up at her and asked her a personal question.

“Are you a follower of Christ, Doctor?”

“Yes, I am Lieutenant and I realize few are going to survive this, first Trumpet. However, my family and I are ready. We know we are soon to meet God.”

“I am a Christian too. But this carnage is beyond my ability to comprehend.”

“This is as the scriptures tell us, God’s judgement on mankind’s sin and rebellion. Lieutenant, we are born again, so we will be fine. My job now is to hold their hands, ask people to accept Jesus as their Savior before they die. Hundreds have taken my offer and accepted Him. It is an honor to serve Him during this time in history. Maybe you can do the same.”

The Lieutenant's eyes began tearing. It was evident that he found death challenging.

“We need to get your supplies moved out of the trucks. As you are doing, Dr. Caruso, I too will try to save as many souls as possible,” he said between his tears.”

She watched him go, knowing he, as many, would soon die.

### Chapter 28

##### Day 15 Of The Ash Cloud

##### Eden II Studios

##### Rescued

T

wo minutes before Eden II's broadcast resumed, John saw the day's stories laid out in front of him. Only unwelcome news, except for two items. Elijah’s arranged live telecast featuring a tour of the nearly completed Temple in Jerusalem. There was a special tomorrow covering the placement of ‘The Ark of the Covenant’ into ‘The Temple’s Holy of Holies,’ by the Levites. Many Israelis were camping out along the parade route, eagerly awaiting the Levites' procession with 'The Ark' to 'The Temple'. John's notification timer counted down from five seconds as the announcer began.

“People of the world, welcome to Eden II News. Here is our host, John Roddenburg.”

“Good evening, everyone. We are here with the day’s news as I am joined by Mary Ann Sinclair and Geraldo Vasquez.”

“We begin with volcanic eruptions worldwide. We are seeing signs the volcano's ash production is slowing. In some cases, they have become dormant again. Emergency crews worldwide are attempting rescues of those trapped in cities. Unfortunately, the hot embers combined with ash destroyed countless lives, cutting off numerous urban areas from help. We have our resident Doctor to explain what caused many of the deaths. Thank you, Doctor Shiva, for joining us.”

Dr. Shiva had a picture of a pair of lungs on an easel.

“Normally, there are few deaths from volcanic ash. However, with so many volcanoes erupting, many people have been exposed to enormous quantities of tiny silica particles and are unable to receive help in time. Past eruptions taught us much of a volcanos debris are microscopic. Unknowingly, individuals breathed these particles deep into their lungs. With high exposure, even healthy individuals experience chest discomfort, increased coughing, and irritation.”

“Prolonged exposure to this unhealthy air causes many to suffocate. Suffocation will be a primary cause of death. Many people fleeing the affected areas found themselves trapped in cars. With nowhere to go, they breathed this polluted air for several days. Unfortunately, the noxious air resulted in many dying from elevated levels of carbon dioxide, poisonous gasses, occurring closer to the epicenters of the blast. Individuals with pre-existing illnesses, such as asthma, had little chance of survival if they were caught outside. The other killer comes from burning and smoke inhalation. In Salt Lake City, 60 percent of homes and businesses caught fire.”

“What concerns us the most is famine. We now have a 1,000-mile-wide cloud of dust circling the globe. The temperature has dropped severely in certain areas. Much of America's farmland is useless until cleared of ash in the future. Altogether we estimate one third of Earth's food supply will disappear. Starvation will affect the world’s population.”

“Thank you, Dr. Shiva. We appreciate your input. We realize the long-term effects of the volcanoes may cause many deaths even as the eruptions cease. It is unfortunate, but the Prophets foretold this ‘Trumpet’s’ havoc. We hope that those who passed were sealed in Christ.”

“In other news, major cities in the Western United States are still under siege by the volcanoes. Metropolises such as Salt Lake City, Denver and Billings are on the verge of destruction because of the eruptions. The blazes with hot ash have taken their toll. Los Angeles, rebuilding after the earthquake 19 months ago, has people living in tents and breathing ash. Fires have claimed close to 40 percent of the homes. Airborne particles have fully contaminated southern California’s freshwater aqueduct. Clean water is no longer available in Southern California municipalities.”

“I will be the bearer of sad news,” Nancy added. “Current estimated death tolls we are being given for the Western United States and the Midwest are now exceeding 12 million people. The report goes onto say, authorities cannot get into certain areas for a better count.”

“Wow, Nancy,” Brad said, “that's an overwhelming number of lives.”

“According to Elijah and Enoch,” Geraldo added, “the casualty number for America will rise significantly. We also know as a result of lost crops and animal husbandry, famine may be the worst killer of all.”

“You are correct, Geraldo. We have only reached the tip of the iceberg for deaths. We will update you on the numbers as the days go by.”

“Turning to world leaders, because of the ash, many are stranded in Babylon, Iraq. They are conducting business via satellite telephones and other communication devices. The current ban on flying is the reason for their extended stay. As we are aware, worldwide shutdown of mass transportation is in effect.”

“On a brighter note, we have an announcement. Many of you watched Tahit’s interview with the family driving their recreational vehicle in Salt Lake City. Jack and Marilyn Okabee were traveling with their son, daughter, their spouses, and three grandchildren. They made it to I-70, headed toward Denver. Regrettably, traffic stopped as the ash started falling. They got off at an exit connecting to a secondary road. Sadly, their RV broke down and they discovered that their generator was clogged. With the remaining battery power, they sent out calls for help on their CB radio, on the trucker’s channel.”

“Here at Eden II, we were monitoring these channels, listening for additional news regarding the volcanoes. One of our technicians heard the distress request. She provided Enil with the details, who remembered their interview. He shared the facts with Enoch. Remembering who they were, he rescued them. They are here today with us at Eden II. So, to the Okabee household, welcome!”

Their camera panned to capture the loved ones together on Eden II’s interview couch.

“On a side note, Jack’s a Jack of All Trades, repair person, no pun intended,” John said as he grinned. “We put him to work at once.”

“Other news deals with the massacres in Washington and England. A press release from the nation's capital stated the funerals for those massacred in the Capitol are postponed until individual states can hold ceremonies. Once again, we at Eden II offer our sincere sympathies to their surviving families.”

Eden II concluded their news for the day, as Enil released the airwaves.

### Chapter 29

##### Eden II Special, Unveiling The Ark of the Covenant Jerusalem, Israel

##### The Voice Of God

T

he announcer began the introduction, “This is a special report from Eden II News, with John Roddenburg.” The Eden II Logo appeared with 'Breaking News' blazed on the display.

“Welcome to Eden II News. I am John Roddenburg. We are interrupting our normal broadcast today to bring you the placing of ‘The Ark of the Covenant,’ missing some 2,600 years, into the nearly completed Jewish Temple. We have our correspondent reporting live from Israel, Jaeger Barak.”

“Hello John. Jaeger Barak reporting from Jerusalem. We are waiting for ‘The Ark’ to be placed in the ‘Holy of Holies’ today. Since Elijah discovered the ancient artifact two years ago, the Israeli government stored it under 24-hour guard in the Antiquities Building.”

“We understand Jager thousands of people lined the streets from the Antiquities Department all the way to The Temple.”

“That is an understatement. Jerusalem hotels are filled to capacity and the outskirts of the city are full of tent cities.”

“Has someone given you a prelude to today's festivities?”

“Yes, we have. According to press releases, the four Levites will carry 'The Ark of the Covenant', using the original poles that were discovered with it. They are going to be accompanied by additional Levites, carrying the furnishings to be placed in the innermost sanctuary. The Gilt Table, also known as the Table of Shewbread, as well as the Golden Menorah Lampstand, featuring Seven Oil Lamps that never go out. Curtains for the roof, the Purple Veiling for the ‘Holy of Holies,’ and the Outer Curtain. Mark Lebowitz, head of the Israeli Antiquities Department, will guide them out of the Antiquities Headquarters. 'The Ark' will be passed on to a new group of Levites every four blocks, with the previous group taking a break.”

“The route to The Temple is lined with spectators. Our notes indicate the procession is scheduled to start at the oval parking entrance of the Antiquities Headquarters. They are going to follow Sultan Suleiman Street, to the Tomb of the Unknown Soldier, through the park, then the Yeusefiya Cemetery. From there, the parade is scheduled to turn onto Lion Gateway Street, onto King Faisal Street. They will then take the walking path to Baraua Street, which leads to the Old City of Jerusalem. From there, they will enter ‘The Temple Mount’.”

“What is the total distance they will carry ‘The Ark’?”

“A little over a mile. With the stops to change carriers, it will take around 45 minutes.”

“We understand many Israeli celebrities are taking part today; and will accompany ‘The Ark of the Covenant,’ as it makes its way to ‘The Temple’.”

“You are correct. Both Chief Rabbis, Yona Salant and Benjamin Hagen, will be directly behind ‘The Ark of the Covenant.’ Prime Minister David Ben Bernstein, Rabbi Cohan will follow them of ‘The Temple Institute,’ and George Finkel, Director of National Construction Projects. Following them will be the entire Knesset and their leaders. After them, the construction workers who helped Elijah build ‘The Temple, then many Rabbis and others.”

“Where will Elijah be?”

“Sorry, I forgot the most important person. Elijah will lead the parade. A Drum Corps from the Israel Defense Forces is going to be marching, along with a full ensemble orchestra. They are going to be behind Elijah. At The Temple, as the door to the ‘Holy of Holy’s Inner Sanctuary’ of ‘The Tabernacle’ is opened, the trumpet and drum section of the IDF Orchestra will be playing.”

“From your description, Jager, today's festivities are going to be a one-of-a-kind, historic ceremony.”

“Yes, I agree. Look at it this way, since the Babylon Conquest in 587 BC, ‘Israel has not seen The Ark of the Covenant’ and its furnishings, over 2,600 years. The crowd is excited.”

Eden II News cut away from Jager, as a drone camera authorized by the defense department fed video to the monitors. The streets, cemetery, and walkways were filled with an overwhelming sea of people. Everywhere they looked, security personnel stood watch, their vigilant eyes scanning the surroundings. Jager’s image returned to the screen.

“It's almost time for the parade to start. The video you have seen comes from an IDF feed. They are using drones coupled with stationary cameras to supply images of the procession. They are providing their live feeds to news outlets in real time.”

“Great, we will be watching.”

“This is Jager Barak, reporting from Jerusalem.”

The cameras switched back to Eden II, focusing on John.

“As the Israeli defense drones broadcast, we intend to depict what is taking place.”

The split screen showed John and his co-anchors and the scene from Jerusalem on the video feed. The double doors of the Antiquities Headquarters opened as Elijah walked out.

“Look at Elijah’s clothes,” Mary Ann exclaimed! “His hair is even combed! He is carrying a thurible, filled with incense, connected to a golden chain!”

“We were given a detailed account of the clothing he is wearing today,” Geraldo said. “The document states his clothes were made by Levites, who were assigned this task for today's ceremonies. Elijah's clothing and robe is a piece of attire called an Ephod. The garment was fashioned from linen of gold, blue, purple, and scarlet. The Ephod comes in two parts, clasped together at the shoulder by two onyx stones, set inside pure gold. Each of these onyx stones is engraved with the names of the Twelve Tribes of Israel. Six names, in order of birth, are carried on one shoulder, six on the other.”

“He is magnificent,” Mary Ann added. “May we assume this attire is what the High Priest wore during the days of King David?”

“It says here, these are exact replicas of the High Priest's garments, based on descriptions of attire from the Talmud, during King David's era.”

As the Drum Corps came out of the building, John commented.

“There are 12 drummers symbolizing, ‘The Twelve Tribes of Israel’. They are clad in ancient battle dress in an officer’s white wool tunic, with bright red mantels pinned with a single gold leaf at each shoulder. The percussionists are also wearing bright yellow trimmed kippas atop their heads.”

The musicians with drums made a semicircle around Elijah as he held a microphone. Elijah stepped up to a small pedestal as he addressed the Israelites.

“Today, I speak to the Twelve united Tribes of Israel. You have come home, after 2,600 years. We are for the first time since the Babylon conquest, united together in the land given to our ancestor, Moses. We are standing on our land claimed by Joshua. This land of milk and honey was promised by God after the slavery of 400 years in Egypt. We returned to our homeland again after the Babylonian exile. We are gathered here again, after the Roman conquest drove us from our homeland. We are here after the attempted extermination of the Nazi’s holocaust.”

“As a people, we have overcome more adversity compared to any nation throughout the history of humankind. We are stronger because of our nation’s will, and our belief in the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. God… is… Israel. The Word of God is what Israel believes. Today, for the first time since the Diaspora, ‘The Ark of the Covenant’ God commanded Moses to build, will once again find its Holy Place, in ‘The Third Temples’ ‘Holy of Holies’.”

Elijah encouraged the crowd as they were praising Yahweh.

“Each of you recite with me our prayer.”

Elijah looked at the sky with arms extended toward the Heavens, while a young lad held the microphone close to his lips. The crowd joined in.

“Hear O’Israel, the Lord is our God, the Lord is One. Blessed is His name, whose glorious kingdom is forever, and ever. Love the Lord your God with all your heart, and all your soul, and all your might. These words I give you today shall be upon your heart. Repeat these words to your children and teach God’s Word to them when you sit in your home, and when you walk down the street; when you lie down, and when you rise up. Hold fast to them as a sign upon your hand and let them be as reminders before your eyes. Write them on the doorposts of your home, and at your gates. Amen.”

Following the prayer, Elijah took a moment to gather his thoughts before making his next provocative statement.

“In the present time, I am to give you a new command from Adonai Himself. This directive your God has directed me to tell you today.”

“Believe not only in My ‘Word,’ I gave to those who came before you. Believe in the One I sent to you, my precious Son, whom your ancestors, and you failed to believe in. Believe now in My Son, for I AM your God. I have returned you to your homeland using my servants Elijah and Enoch. I have shown you My power with the ‘First Trumpet’ of Revelation. I have now shown you the way and the truth. Do not turn away from Me, as the ones who built the golden calf in the desert. Open your hearts and accept Jesus' My Son as your Messiah. In a genuinely brief period, you will witness my Son's face shining in glory. Then every person shall bow, and every knee shall bend to the One who is, who was and is to come. The King of Kings and Lord of Lords. The Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning, and the End.”

“If you decide to abandon My Son and My Word, I will deliver you into the enemy's hands for torture and punishment. I will cut you down. Therefore, celebrate Israel, for I, the Lord God, have come back to dwell with you within ‘The Ark of the Covenant,’ as during the time of Moses. My covenant, your Ark, will be placed into the last and final ‘Temple.’ Rejoice today, for I AM with you always. Amen.”

When Elijah finished, Geraldo commented.

“John, you could hear a pin drop in Israel. No one said a thing. Elijah’s reference to Jesus caught them by surprise.”

“You are correct. From our monitor, I see angry faces in the crowd. Some are hard core Jews who absolutely refuse to believe in Christ.”

“Look John,” said Mary Ann, “the Chief Rabbi Benjamin Hagan, has taken the microphone from Elijah, forcibly. There may be trouble this very day from him. He appears to be angry.”

“He’s speaking Mary Ann, let’s listen,”

“Each of you knows I am one of two Chief Rabbis of Israel. Here on this occasion, we heard from ‘ah Satan’ himself. He has declared Jesus as the Messiah. He is evil and straight from the devil himself. He is a demon, sent to trick us into believing in his fairy tales. Oh, nation of Israel, do not be deceived by the resplendent clothing he wears.”

John noticed someone handed a microphone to Elijah. He looked at the Chief Rabbi as he shouted.

“Rabbi, what did I tell you the other day? What did I declare will happen if you continue to tell lies about me and Jesus?”

“It doesn't matter Elijah, the divine power is on my side.”

“No, he is not Benjamin. Today, with all of Israel as my witness, I am going to prove it!”

“How can you validate it, Elijah? Are you going to speak to God Himself, right here, right now? You are a fake, Elijah!”

Disregarding Benjamin, Elijah shifted his attention to the crowds to prepare them.

“The other day I told Benjamin, were he to proclaim that Israel must deny Jesus, the Lord God would strike him down. Today you will see, I will fulfill my prophecy to him before all of Israel. “

Elijah turned toward Benjamin, staring at him. The two men were eye to eye. You could perceive from the image on the monitor they were angry with each other.

“You, Benjamin, have asked me to prove to you I am whom I say I am, and that Jesus is the Messiah. Now Benjamin, you will answer to the Lord God. You shall stand before Him in judgement, on this day.”

Elijah handed the microphone back to the same boy. The child held it close to Elijah’s lips. He lifted his eyes to the Heavens.

“Lord God of Israel, smite this man who wishes to lead the Tribes of Israel astray. Strike him down, with your voice.”

Elijah turned away from Benjamin toward the crowd as he shouted at them in a booming voice.

“Look and hear, people of Israel… watch the wonder of God Almighty!”

The vast expanse of the clear blue sky appeared to split in two. Somehow, the heavens looked almost like a 3D image, as God’s thunderous voice boomed.

“I AM the God of your forefathers, I am the God of Moses, of Joshua, of David, and all the descendants of Abraham. I have sent my servants Elijah and Enoch to you. Many refuse to believe… I, the Lord God am commanding you to listen to the words of My Witnesses. Do not believe in this man, who speaks against my Son Jesus and My Witnesses. I will strike him down, never to return again.”

Thunder started rumbling in the clear skies above Jerusalem. The rumbling grew increasingly loud. It caused many to cover their ears. Then, from the cloudless sky, from the finger of God, a single stream of intense light-struck Benjamin. He vanished, no trace remaining, no clothing, no body, no ashes, nothing.

The crowd kneeled, looking toward Heaven, as they heard the voice of the Almighty. Then silence.

Elijah addressed the throngs of people.

“Adonai has spoken today. You must obey His commands or, as Rabbi Benjamin, Yahweh is going to strike you down for your transgressions against Him. Now, under God's guidance, I have the divine task of carrying out His will. Our ceremony to place the sacred Ark in the Temple will proceed as planned.”

Elijah faced the doors of the Antiquities building as he shouted.

“Stand O' Israel, witness 'The Ark of God'. Behold the work of Bezalel, Oholiab, and Moses, the builders of ‘The Ark of the Covenant’.”

At Eden II, the video feed observed the drum's rhythmic pounding as four Levites stepped through the doors using two long poles carrying 'The Ark of the Covenant'. They walked in a circle to the cheers and prayers of the people. Elijah led the parade on the pre-arranged route.

“Did you see and hear what just happened, Geraldo?” John asked. “The sky split in two as the voice of the almighty spoke.”

“You are correct. For the first time since communicating with Moses at the burning bush, God uttered words. I still have chills running down my spine. 'The Ark of the Covenant' is with the citizens of Israel. The power of God exists inside. Therefore, I have no doubt God expressed Himself to His people. I know the bolt of lightning or bright light consumed Rabbi Benjamin’s life, so he will face the judgment of the Divine. He is gone with no trace.”

“The Jews have a new commandment,” Mary Ann said. “Today, John, marks the first time since the prophet received the commandments from God that He has spoken. The bright light or lightning strike, which cut down the Chief Rabbi, reminded me when Moses threw down the tablets, destroying Aaron’s golden calf. God showed the nation of Israel and the world what awaits them if they do not obey.”

“I agree with you, Mary Ann. It’s now up to the nation of Israel to accept Jesus as the Messiah.”

“Jager is back,” Geraldo said. “He is interviewing people who stood close to the circle around Elijah where Benjamin was vaporized. Let’s listen in.”

They turned toward their monitor.

“Jager.”

“Yes John. We have a married Israeli couple who speaks English.”

The camera showed Jager with an elderly husband and wife.

“Tell me your names and what you perceived and saw today.”

“My name is Ezra, and my wife’s name is Isabella. What we heard I cannot even explain. To think on this very day in Jerusalem after thousands of years, the Lord God Almighty, Yahweh, spoke to us. I am still shaking from hearing His voice.”

“How does what God commanded to the crowd impact your life? Do you plan on studying the New Testament about Jesus Christ?”

“Yes, we promise,” Isabella said nervously. “We were instructed to embrace Christ. We want to know the good news!”

“What did you think when the finger of God killed the Chief Rabbi, Benjamin Hagan?”

“Reminded me of when Moses came back from the mountain while Israel made a golden calf to worship in his absence,” Ezra replied. “We know the story well. Moses burnt the idol of gold in a fire, ground it to powder, scattered it on water as he forced the Israelites to drink it as punishment. As we witnessed earlier, God was not pleased with Rabbi Benjamin.”

“What do you think of the ceremonies and seeing 'The Ark of the Covenant' for the first time?”

Isabella had tears of joy falling down her cheeks while attempting to smile.

“We're fortunate to be Jews of this generation, who witnessed the glory of 'The Ark of the Covenant' with our own eyes.”

Ezra added praise to his wife’s comment.

“O'Israel,” he exclaimed, “the day is truly magnificent.”

Turning to face the camera, Jager's rugged features came into focus, exuding confidence.

“There you have it John… Isabella thinks as Mary Ann. She as her, both feel the same comparing Rabbi Benjamin to the Golden Calf.”

“Yes, she did,” Jager replied, emphasizing his agreement.

“John, we are heading over toward ‘The Temple.’ The ceremony at the ‘Holy of Holies’ is expected to be incredible. I will check back with you shortly. This is Jager Barak reporting from Jerusalem, for the Eden II network.”

John looked towards the cameras once more.

“We are coming back for the placement of 'The Ark of the Covenant,' into the 'Holy of Holies.' Stay tuned to Eden II.”

### Chapter 30

##### Conference Room,

##### Nebuchadnezzar II Tower

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### 

##### Should Have Melted it Down

C

ain, Jordan, Jamal and others were watching Eden II’s news coverage in Israel of ‘The Ark’ placement.

“They think today is glorious. Wait till we take over Israel,” Cain boasted. “The people will watch Peter the 2nd bring fire down from Heaven to burn the sacrifice. This procession is cheesy, like a fourth of July parade in Hobart, Indiana,” he told the demons assembled with him.

“I agree Cain,” Jamal responded. Prepare to be immersed in a proper celebration, the moment you set foot inside 'The Temple.' What these Jews are currently engaged in will pale in comparison. They consistently fail to do anything correctly. I am surprised, their God spoke to them. He hasn’t spoken in thousands of years to humanity. Doesn’t matter. Later today, we will discredit God's speaking using THE Networks broadcast. We are keeping Brad off the air until the festivities end in Israel. We are using THE Network to reveal the truth behind the illusion they witnessed today, masterminded by the charlatan Elijah.”

“Clever idea, Jamal, a clever idea,” Cain said, giving a rare compliment.

“Beelzebub,” Cain said with a grin, “what do you think of the Jews' party today?”

“First off, young man, I have told you not to use Beelzebub in my presence! Do you understand me?”

“Ok Satan, how’s that?”

“What do you want, Cain?”

“The ‘Second Trumpet.’ Any educated guess where it will occur, which ocean?”

“We really don’t know,” Aafre interjected. “The prophecies are vague.”

“It says Aafre, and this is direct from the Bible. A flaming mountain is going to fall into the sea. I am asking which body of water or ocean?”

Sir Devon Jordan answered his inquiry.

“It is the Baltic Sea or the Mediterranean.”

“Thanks Satan,” Cain said, as he turned toward Aafre.

“We need to make sure they pull our military and commercial ships out of the area.”

“Ship relocation is already in progress.”

“Good. Since we know what is going to occur, it is better to prepare and avoid it. We also need to deal with the Frenchie, Jean Michel Lefevre. We do not have control over him. Jean may cause us a few issues. He is a loudmouth. Any ideas, Aafre?”

“Jean is not aware of who we are. He spoke to Prime Minister Weingart at length the last time he was with us. I doubt he will be a problem. He will vote the way we want him to.”

“Aafre, I trust you on this. The placing of ‘The Ark of the Covenant’ is returning on our monitor; I want to watch it.”

“When we captured that ancient relic the first time, we should have melted it down and made an idol of myself,” Sir Devon Jordan said.

“Yes, you should have,” Cain remarked. “However, as always, you are afraid of the council.”

### Chapter 31

##### The Holy of Holies, The Temple

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### The High Priest

T

he announcer began, “This is a special report in Israel from Eden II News, with John Roddenburg.”

“Welcome back to Eden II. We are going live to Jaeger Barak, our correspondent reporting from Israel. If you are just tuning in, we are following the placement of ‘The Ark of the Covenant,’ into the ‘Third Temple’ of Jerusalem. There was a parade with a lot of fireworks leading up to their arrival at ‘The Temple.’ Keep in mind, we are receiving our video feed from Israeli Defense Department drones, and cameras. We will comment when necessary. Here is our Israeli reporter, Jaeger Barak.”

“Jaeger.”

“Hello John. We have finally made it to the top of ‘The Temple Mount'. You can see on your monitor, thousands of people are here. The Temples courts are filled to capacity. The area surrounding the Holy Place of the ‘Holy of Holies’ is jammed packed. We are looking at the aerial video feed provided by the IDF. It appears every one of the gates leading into ‘The Temple,’ are open today.”

“The procession entered through the South Gate which leads into the Gentiles Courtyard, then through the Water Gate. Once the procession entered the Priest Courtyard, the other gates, the Kindling Gate, Gate of Firstlings, and the Gate Beautiful were open to the public. They open into the women’s courtyard. Access to the Holy Place is by the Gate of Nicanor.”

“Where are you now, Jager?”

“We are standing at the top of one of the towers. There are two cameras providing the live feed with a group of reporters from around the world. From our perch, we have a magnificent view of the Holy Place.”

“Jager, the drone shows the entire Temple complex surrounded with people. How can they see what is occurring?”

“There are eight Jumbotrons setup, in strategic areas circling the Gentiles Courtyard and six outside the gates. Most pilgrims should see the entire ceremony.”

“Big day in Israel.”

“Absolutely, John. Trumpeters are entering the Priests’ Courtyard. Elijah is walking up to a pedestal. Let’s listen in.”

“Hear O’Israel. Today denotes the beginning of 'The Third Temple', representing the restoration of our heritage. As a nation, we are finally after thousands of years, placing ‘The Ark of the Covenant’ where it belongs. Before we place 'The Vessel', we need to anoint a High Priest who will be the only person allowed to enter the 'Holy of Holies'.”

“I am proud to say with God’s blessing, the Holy Levite, entrusted with the ‘Holy of Holies,’ will be none other than Chief Rabbi of the Ashkenazi, Yona Salant.”

The crowds started cheering this choice, as Yona made his way to Elijah. He stood in front of him.

“Welcome Yona Salant, God has chosen you. Today, we will for the first time since the Roman occupation, anoint a Chief Priest in the presence of Israel and God. God told us the ceremony will follow the spirit of Moses, who anointed Arron and his sons. We will follow his example today.”

The crowd separated, as a Rabbi holding anointing oil came forward. He held the rams horn laid upon a red silk pillow as he walked toward Elijah. Another Rabbi followed carrying a basket of unleavened bread.

Elijah shouted at the crowd once the bearers were on stage with the bread and oil.

“Bring forth the heavenly garments of the High Priest.”

Elijah instructed Yona to take off his outer garments. The obedient Yona removed his clothing as Elijah explained the steps of the ceremony.

“Yona, as Moses dressed Arron, I will dress you in your priestly garments, so take off your footwear. You must always approach and enter the ‘Holy of Holies,’ barefoot.”

All watched as each piece of the garments, was placed on Yona by Elijah. The first was the tunic.

“We will ceremoniously place the Ephod on you, symbolizing your authority and responsibility. The precious stones of the Ephod bear the names of the Twelve Tribes, etched into their gleaming surfaces. This Yona is a constant reminder to God of Israel's existence. As High Priest, you embody the hopes and prayers of the entire Israelite community as you stand in the presence of God.”

“With a sense of solemnity, I will don the breastplate onto you, its cool metal pressing against your chest. Embedded in this part of your garment are twelve stones, each representing a tribe of Israel. The breastplate is connected with the Urim and Thummim, which are black and white in color. Each time you enter the sanctuary, Yona, they enable you to seek God's judgment for Israel.”

“I am now gently draping your robe over your shoulders. When you wear this robe, the sound of the bells will announce your arrival to the Divine Presence in the sanctuary.”

Elijah carefully opened a creaking wooden box near the podium, revealing the precious Diadem inside. He carefully lifted the object and gently positioned the Diadem on Yona's head, ensuring it sat perfectly in place.

“The Diadem, a sacred object, has the power to cleanse any wrongdoing associated with Israel's offerings in God's abode. The inscription boldly declares that Israel's worship is sacred to God.”

“Then, Elijah gently took the rams horn filled with fragrant anointing oil from the bearer. As Elijah walked in a circle seven times, he held it high above his head, the crowd cheering and clapping. Elijah then explained its significance.

“Using the sacred oil, Moses anointed every item within The Tabernacle, including 'The Ark of the Covenant', 'The Altar of Incense', 'The Candlestick', 'Table of Shewbread, its Furniture', 'The Altar of Burnt Offering, its Furniture', 'The Basin, and its Pedestal'. We had this oil carefully crafted by a perfumer chosen for their expertise, using a sacred blend of ingredients, as outlined in Exodus 30.

*“It contains, 500 shekels of liquid myrrh, 250 shekels of fragrant cinnamon, 250 shekels of fragrant calamus, 500 shekels of cassia, and a hint of olive oil.”*

Then Elijah, similar to Moses, using the sacred oil, consecrated The Tabernacle and all its contents: 'The Ark of the Covenant', 'The Altar of Incense', 'The Candlestick', 'Table of Shewbread with its furnishings', 'The Altar of Burnt Offering with its furnishings', 'The Basin, and its Pedestal'.

Once finished, Elijah approached Yona who could feel his heart pounding in his chest in anticipation.

With a commanding tone, he bellowed at Yona, his voice echoing through the temple for nim to kneel. As Elijah held the ram's horn above his head, Yona kneeled in reverence. He lowered the container with a deliberate motion, carefully tilting it towards Yona.

“In the same way that Arron was anointed, I now anoint you, Yona, as Moses did.”

Elijah carefully poured the fragrant anointing oil onto Yona's head, marking his sacred elevation to the esteemed role of High Priest of Israel. As the ceremony continued, Yona lifted himself up and joined Elijah, feeling a sense of pride and anticipation.

“Summon the other servants to Yona,” Elijah ordered, his voice echoing with authority.

As if out of nowhere, four men materialized, their feet bare and their attire consisting of white robes, sashes and turbans.

“Men of the Tribe of Levi, kneel before me.”

With a deep sense of reverence, the four Levites kneeled in front of Elijah.

“As Moses anointed Aaron’s four sons; Nadab the firstborn, Abihu, Eleazar and Ithamar, I anoint you to serve as Priests, in the service of God Almighty. From this day forward, you will be known by their names.”

One by one, Elijah anointed them, the scent of the sacred oil filling the air. After Elijah finished, the Priests walked over to stand beside Yona, their solemn expressions reflecting the weight of the moment.

With his hands raised high in the air, Elijah spoke to the crowd.

“Israel, lay your eyes upon them. Just like in the times of Moses, we have anointed and entrusted those who are worthy to enter and care for the sacred 'Holy of Holies'.”

Yona, as the newly appointed High Priest, issued his first command and gave instructions to the newly anointed priest.

“Holy men of Israel, pick up ‘The Ark of the Covenant’ and as in the days of Jericho when the walls fell, march around the ‘Holy of Holies’ with ‘The Ark’.”

The four Levites carefully grasped the poles and raised the Ark of the Covenant. They walked around the Holy Place seven times, their footsteps echoing off the ancient stone walls. When they reached The Temple's six towers, the sound of hundreds of rams' horns echoed through the surroundings. Just like their ancestors did in Jericho, the crowd united their voices in a powerful, resounding shout!

Yona, the High Priest, let out a deafening shout that echoed through the temple.

“Return 'The Ark of the Covenant' to its rightful spot.”

With bated breath, the four Levites crossed the threshold into the sacred 'Holy of Holies', feeling the weight of their responsibility. Walking past the Veil, they seemed to dissolve into nothingness. Once they emerged from the 'Holy of Holies', they carefully positioned the poles in a secluded corner of the porch. Next the four men exited to the outer court. They carefully lifted the Lampstand, The Table holding the Shewbread, and The Altar of Incense, meticulously arranging each item in its rightful place. The Menorah's seven lamps were ignited, their flames dancing and illuminating the surroundings with a perpetual radiance. As they exited the Holy Place, Yona's voice rang out again, giving them another command.

“Close the doors.”

They closed the doors and assumed their positions as guards, standing with their hands clasped below their waist. Time seemed to slow down as they stood there for three long minutes, their surroundings becoming a blur. Finally, Yona raised his hand, his finger pointing directly at the Levites.

“Open the doors.”

After the doors opened, Yona stepped into the Holy Place, past the Veil, and was immediately overwhelmed by the sense of sacredness that filled the 'Holy of Holies'.

Elijah addressed the crowd, vividly describing the actions of Yona.

“People of Israel. Your High Priest has gone to speak with God in the innermost chamber known as the 'Holy of Holies', where only the most sacred rituals are performed. Kneel and pray, hoping that your God Adonai will grace Yona with his divine voice today.”

The people knelt, their hands reaching up towards the Heavens as they fervently prayed for ten minutes.

With great eloquence, Jaeger Barak shared his profound commentary.

“Yona will emerge from the 'Holy of Holies' to speak God's words to the people. His comments are what we are waiting to hear.”

“Is it possible that he actually has conversations with God in that place?” John inquired, his voice filled with curiosity.

“Without a doubt, he does.”

After what seemed like an eternity, Yona finally emerged from the Holy Place and confidently approached the podium, where he exchanged a warm greeting with Elijah. After the customary exchange of pleasantries, Yona stepped forward and faced the gathered people.

“It is with great excitement that I can share that I have personally spoken to God Almighty!”

In a hushed tone, Jaeger Barak spoke into his microphone.

“John, have you observed that Yona's hair is completely white in color? The color of it was black before. This situation brings to mind the biblical story of Moses, who famously conversed with God through a burning bush.”

“You are correct Jaeger. I didn’t notice his hair at first.”

Everyone was waiting for Yona to give a blessing. He finally lifted his head and spoke to the masses.

“Adonai made it known that Yahweh's people bring Him joy. In the coming years, it is inevitable that we will experience times of trouble, but let us turn our gaze towards the Heavens, Israel, and remain vigilant. In the near future, His Son Jesus will make a glorious comeback, and it is expected that Israel will once again become the central figure in the global landscape. God's message is clear - hold onto your faith in Jesus and live your life in accordance with His teachings.”

Yona lowered his arms, gracefully stepped down from the platform, and issued a commanding order to the four Priests, instructing them to promptly close the doors.

As soon as the drummers began their performance, the resounding sound of the trumpets filled the air, creating a harmonious melody from the orchestra, while the procession gracefully changed direction and made its way back towards the Antiquities building. During the return trip, Yona assumed the role of leading the procession while Elijah followed in his footsteps.

After a short period of time, Jaeger Barak made a remark to John.

“The ceremony is over. Israel has a High Priest once again.”

“I am sure you noticed Jager, as we did here at Eden II; Yona brought up Jesus again.”

“Yes, and I think many Jews will soon accept Jesus as the Messiah. Only Time Will Tell.”

“Thank you Jager. We will now sign off.”

“This is Jager Barak, reporting from Jerusalem, for the Eden II Network.”

### Chapter 32

##### THE Network News, Brad Williams Reporting

##### Chicago, IL

##### Illusions

P

eople of the world, welcome to THE Network News. Live in Chicago with your host, Brad Williams.

“Good evening, America and the world. Tonight, with Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan, we will cover the news of the day, including the placing of ‘The Ark of the Covenant’, in Jerusalem’s Temple.”

“But before this story, we need to update you concerning the volcanoes which have devastated the world. As many of you know, the alien terrorists Elijah and Enoch brought these eruptions upon us. Elijah today was the Master of Ceremonies in Jerusalem. Israel still protects him. There is an ash-cloud circling the globe as we speak. This ash-cloud is blocking the sun’s rays from reaching much of the Earth. The Northern Hemisphere is cooling. No summer forecasted, say meteorologists.

“Many of our Nation’s cities are covered in ash and some cities have burned to the ground from the hot embers. The Cain administration activated the National Guard to move into the affected states providing some relief efforts. They will bring water, medical supplies and meals.”

“Based on current death counts worldwide, these alien Witnesses are responsible for twenty million deaths. This number is rising as governments worldwide get help in the affected areas, assess damage and death counts. Most deaths are from either suffocation or died from injuries directly caused by the fires.”

“We have news from Babylon. Leaders of the world are still meeting there. Their focus now is aid to the affected countries from the eruptions worldwide. Air travel is grounded since airlines cannot safely fly through the ash-cloud. So, world leaders are still in Babylon.”

“We also have a drinking water issue. The ash has clogged many freshwater plants worldwide. The government has suggested you strain the water using coffee filters, boil the water for three minutes, then strain again. This water purification warning is for everyone west of the Mississippi.”

“Catherine Kwan has disturbing news concerning the pageantry of today’s events in Jerusalem.”

“Thank you, Brad. Many of you who saw the pageantry today may remember the part where one of the Chief Priests was zapped by a bright light and disappeared. His disappearance was coupled with the voice of God coming from the sky. This entire show of Elijah’s was staged. I have with us today a guest we have had on our show before. Tony, as he did with Enoch’s speech and his Hocus Pocus over two years ago will unveil the illusions you saw in Jerusalem today. You may remember, Tony Aquila is a world-renowned magician and illusionist. Tony is presently headlining in Las Vegas. He has the inside track on how Elijah tricked the Jewish people and the world today, at ‘The Temple’ ceremony.”

Catherine turned toward the monitor behind them.

“Tony.”

“Nice to see you again, Catherine. We have figured out what Elijah did today. Like the magic show Enoch put on a few years ago, Elijah outdid him. I was amazed at what Elijah could pull off on such a wide scale. However, Catherine, those who have seen one of my shows could see us talking to God, lightning striking, and a person disappearing. We can replicate Elijah’s illusions with the use of what we call tricks of the trade.”

“How did Elijah deceive the people in Israel today?”

“Catherine, the God thing is simple to recreate. They projected an image onto the sky using a powerful spotlight with a template. We use spotlights for several of our illusions. They placed a template on the glass of the spotlight which reflects off microscopic water droplets in the air, resulting in a convincing picture. After the template shows the sky splitting, they just bounced the voice of God off the air itself. With a lot of base, it would have shaken the people’s bodies. The people were probably so scared they ignored the fact, the sounds were coming from around them, not above them.”

“What about the lightning and Rabbi’s disappearance?”

“This trick is simple. I create an intense beam of light using a generator with a laser attachment. As for the disappearance of a person, we entertain our fans with this trick every day in Vegas.”

“What became of the body?”

“I don’t know. Maybe they killed the Rabbi after Elijah performed his illusion. We do not know.”

“Thanks Tony, we appreciate your input.”

“Quickly Tony, how bad is it in Vegas, with the ash falling?” Brad asked.

“They shut Vegas down. I am speaking to you from my summer home in Pennsylvania.”

“So, you’re not there?”

“No, I left before the volcanoes erupted.”

“We are glad you are safe, Tony.”

“Thank you, Brad and Catherine.”

Brad and his co-anchors turned back from the monitor. as Brad wrapped the segment up.

“As Tony has said repeatedly, Enoch and Elijah are just skilled magicians. We will be right back.”

The

Second

Trumpet

A statue of a person holding a ball

Description automatically generated with low confidence

### Chapter 33

##### NASA HQ, Planetary Defense Coordination Labs

##### Washington DC

##### Asteroid

T

om and Glenda were in their lab monitoring the skies as they do every day. They are engaged in the task of seeking out and meticulously recording all instances of asteroids observed by telescopes and amateur astronomers from different parts of the world. On this day, they received a surprising assortment of images, which caused them to react with shock and disbelief.

“Glenda, we have video from our NASA Infrared Telescope Facility, Institute of Astronomy, from the University of Hawaii. Our current situation is quite concerning as we have an NEO, commonly referred to as a 'Near Earth Object', that is dangerously close to us.”

“Tom, how close?”

“Glenda, look at my screen. You can see the estimated trajectories on my monitor, showing the asteroid colliding with Earth. The orbital intersection distance from Earth is less than 0.01 astronomical units. Our absolute magnitude reading is higher than 30.”

“Have we notified Hans Schmidt?”

“No, not yet. I wanted to see whether this NEO was continuing its same trajectory. For the moment, it has not varied from our projected path. This NEO orbit is the closest we have ever tracked. The Near-Earth Object's size is brighter than anything we have ever seen.

“How big is it?”

“Nearly a half mile across. We need to report this NEO at once.”

Tom picked up his telephone and dialed Dr. Hans Schmidt’s extension. He picked it up after the third ring.

“Hello.”

“Dr. Schmidt, it is Tom from our operations lab. An unidentified near-Earth object is currently in an elliptical pattern. For the first time, we have an intersection of less than 1. The absolute magnitude exceeds 30. What do we do? This has never happened before.”

“Bring your data to the third-floor conference room at once. I will meet you there, say, 15 minutes. Print out your findings and whatever else you have.”

“Yes, sir, we will be there,” he said as he replaced the receiver.

Tom conveyed to Glenda the information that was shared by Dr. Schmidt. Without hesitation, both of them quickly sprang into action.

“Glenda, make hard copies of everything we have and make five duplicates. We need to get this upstairs quickly. I will send the video to Hans' email. He can project it on the conference room's screen.”

Both of them simultaneously began pressing the print screen commands on their keyboards. The two plotters diligently printed the trajectory information, their machines humming softly. Tom printed the vibrant stills of Hawaii that they had received. It took them a mere ten minutes to complete the task, working with impressive efficiency. They carefully packed the data sheets, printouts, and pictures into sturdy boxes. Exiting the lab, they stepped into the elevator, its doors sliding shut behind them.

### Chapter 34

##### NASA HQ, Planetary Defense, Conference Room

##### Washington, DC

##### Noelani

T

he participants were waiting for Tom and Glenda. Program Director Dr. Hans Schmidt, Sheldon Rikers, Geophysicist from the University of Montreal, Linda Perkins, Public Communications Officer and Logan Diaz, Program Manager in charge of International Partnerships were there. Two other team members were not reachable. Hans reached over to the phone on the conference table and dialed the number to connect with NASA Director Alice Markovich. He put her on their speaker phone.

“Hello Hans, I received the notification you would be calling. It was clear from your message that there was an urgent matter at hand.”

“Yes, it is Alice. We have a dangerously close NEO we just identified.”

“Who is with you, Doctor Schmidt?”

“Sheldon Rikers, Linda Perkins, Logan Diaz. And Tom Armstrong. Glenda Purcell will be here with the data momentarily.”

“What’s the unwelcome news?”

“An intersection distance of less than one, with an absolute magnitude exceeding 30.”

“Oh my God, he is spot on!” Alice exclaimed from her end of the phone line.

“Who is he?” Schmidt asked.

“Enoch, the Witness. According to him, a few months back, he prophesied about a 'Second Trumpet' sounding in Heaven and a fiery mountain colliding with the sea.”

“Is this scientific, Director?”

“No, just an observation.”

The conference room door opened as Tom and Glenda arrived. Wasting no time, they passed out to each participant the materials and put the plotter images on the table. Glenda plugged her laptop into the presentation room monitor. Finished, they took a seat. Hans brought Alice back into the conversation.

“We have the data sheets here with the trajectory plots. They check out.”

“What are you saying, Doctor?”

“Earth is about to collide, with a half mile wide asteroid.”

“Where?”

“It’s too early to calculate entry and impact.”

“How long before probable impact?”

“Eight to ten days. We need to accumulate more definitive data to provide a conclusion.”

“Is this Near-Earth Object, an extinction mode situation?”

“It is improbable. However, where it hits, it will bring about certain death, for whatever is in its trajectory or anything within 1,000 miles of impact.”

“Alice, should we make this public, or wait?” Linda asked.

“I don’t know. We are required by law to issue a warning. This NEO’s coming at us, right after the volcanoes quit erupting. How much more can we withstand?”

Logan contributed to the discussion with a courteous caution.

“According to international agreements, we need to notify our partners, so they are aware of what we found. I caution everyone here… not making this information public would be a disaster. The absolute magnitude of 30 makes this NEO appear as a moving star. Amateur astronomers will be all over this and social media will explode with the updates.”

“Dr. Schmidt, what’s your take?” Linda asked.

“Logan is right. We need to disclose the information.

“Okay Linda,” Alice said. “Release the basic information. No details. In the meantime, I will talk to our military. Perhaps they can try some offensive maneuvers on this invader.”

“Alice, should I include your armed forces remark in the press release?” Linda asked.

“Table my comment until I can speak to the right people.”

“I am going to inform our international partners when we finish,” Logan stated. “China has a similar program to ours, dealing with Near-Earth Objects deflection. I plan to contact them right away.”

“We have a plan,” Alice replied. “How about meeting again in three hours? Also, get everyone plotting this NEO’s exact course. Has anyone named it yet?”

“No,” Schmidt replied.

“Well, name it something, Director. Don’t use numbers for public release, the public easily becomes confused.”

“Alice. how about a straightforward choice?” Tom suggested. “Maybe use the scientist who found and tracked the asteroid in Hawaii. Her name is Noelani. It means from Heaven.”

“That’s a pun Tom.”

“Sort of, but her given name matches where this asteroid is coming from. I believe that name is appropriate.”

“Fine, we will call the asteroid Noelani.

### Chapter 35

##### Asteroid Press Conference, NASA HQ, Planetary Defense

##### Washington DC

##### Ask Enoch

L

inda Perkins, Communications Director of the Planetary Defense Coordination Office addressed the press assembled there.

“Alice Markovich, Director of NASA and Dr. Schmidt, the Director of Planetary Defense, is scheduled to be here and address your concerns. We have a press release; our assistants are passing out. I will summarize the contents for you. Questions need to be held until Alice and Doctor Schmidt arrive. I am going to skip the salutations.”

“On June 3rd, our University of Hawaii's NASA Infrared Telescope Facility Institute detected an asteroid near Saturn, heading towards Earth.”

“It has been determined; this near-Earth Object is an asteroid approximately one-half mile across. Current projections have the NEO intersecting with Earth within eight days. The exact time and projected area of impact are unknown.”

“Our global partners with scientists from different nations have been made aware of the situation. We are coordinating our efforts with these countries’ resources, relating to planetary defense coordination. No details are available of viable options currently.”

“For reference, they named the asteroid Noelani after the tech student in Hawaii who discovered its presence.”

The press room went ballistic. They were shouting out questions Linda could not answer. Trying to talk over them, she repeated herself.

“I cannot provide answers to your inquiries. Both Alice and Doctor Schmidt should be here momentarily.”

Through a side door, to her relief, Alice and Dr. Schmidt finally arrived. Alice went directly to the podium to address the press corps.

“You all have a copy of the media release. We can confirm that the asteroid is expected to either pass within 110 miles above our planet or impact our globe somewhere. Now, we will attempt to answer your questions.”

Alice pointed to a man from the Washington Post who reported favorably about NASA in the past.

“Abe Schriever, Washington Post. If I heard you correctly, are you confirming Enoch’s Bible prediction of a fiery mountain, impacting a sea?”

“No, I am not. The Bible's prophecies, or this Witness, are not part of our discovery. Our discovery is scientifically based on using our abilities to find and track NEOs. Nothing more or nothing less.”

Alice pointed to David Schlesinger.

“David Schlesinger, The New York Times, Science Section Chief. Linda, are you working on a plan to deflect this asteroid? Is there anything we can do?”

“Let me bring Dr. Schmidt over. He should be the one to address this.”

Doctor Schmidt changed places with Alice.

“We're developing a plan to deflect an asteroid heading toward our planet. This involves developing innovative technologies for rapid response near-Earth object reconnaissance missions. The idea is to launch a spacecraft toward a celestial rock, then change the intruder's course. DART in 2022 was successful in redirecting a space rock. However, it was only 560 feet long, and this one is considerably larger. Unfortunately, this project took a full year to complete. We only have eight days. This asteroid is too close.”

“Are you saying we have no options?”

“Not really. Our choices, with limited time to prepare, are limited. We can try aiming nuclear-tipped missiles toward the rock. However, the explosion could cause splinters, then we have a larger problem. The fragments could destroy cities, dams, infrastructure such as electrical grids, worldwide. There is no way to track or direct what or where shards may impact? Watch the movie Armageddon from 1999. Hollywood did an excellent job showing the destruction which may occur by hitting an asteroid with a missile.”

Dr. Schmidt stepped back as Alice pointed to THE Network reporter.

“Elaine Foster, THE Network News. Dr. Schmidt, I will pose my query to you. Are you stating there are no workable options currently to deflect this asteroid? Let me add to the question. You also alluded the asteroid is too close to us to intervene. Is this true?”

Dr. Schmidt returned to the microphone.

“Elaine, at this moment, yes, and yes.”

His answer sent the place into a shouting match. As Communications Director, Linda walked to the mic and barked at the unruly press.

“Please calm down. Nothing will be answered while you are all raising your voices!”

The room finally quieted down, as Dr. Schmidt continued.

“We are using computer models to search for scenarios to deter this NEO. Once again, we found this near-Earth object too late. If we had six months or a year advance notice, we would have additional alternatives.”

Schmidt stepped away from the podium as Alice returned.

“One more question,” Alice said, as she selected Harry McCoy.

“Harry McCoy, Boston Globe. Alice, let me word this correctly. Does Enoch have knowledge of the asteroid's impact location?”

Alice stared at McCoy. He was setting her up with his loaded question. She wanted to say yes, why don’t you contact him? Doing that would end her career. Alice stared at him.

“Do you have an answer?” He asked again.

Alice chose the clear path to solve the problem.

“Assuming from history, Enoch may know the answer. Harry, I am certain he intends to tell the world using Eden II. Otherwise, I have no method of knowing the answer to your question.”

After the last question, Linda concluded the press conference.

“We have no more time today. We will release more information as we receive additional data.”

The reporters continued shouting out questions.

### Chapter 36

##### Albert Meers Farm

##### Salina, KS

##### Bitter Water

L

inda hearing someone at their entrance, called for her husband. “Al, a person is here at the door asking for you.”

“I am coming. Give me a second.”

Al wondered who could be outside? They had not seen a visitor since the volcanoes. The ash levels were over 22 inches deep. Who would go out in this stuff? Al opened the front door. Standing at his door was Jim Reeves. He noticed a state-owned snowplow parked in their driveway. Jim must have driven it here.

“Jim, don't stay out there in the cold and dust.”

“Thanks Al, don’t mind if I do.”

“Follow me. We have freshly brewed coffee Linda just made.”

Jim followed him to the kitchen as Al grabbed another mug from the cabinet and poured a cup.

“Milk, or sugar?”

“No, blacks fine.”

Al handed the cup to Jim and sat with him.

“You are a welcome sight. Surprised you’re driving around.”

“The Department of Transportation, let me borrow it. I told them I needed to go check on people like yourself who live outside the city. Knowing the roads are still covered with ash, we felt the snowplow would get me here.”

“It evidently did.”

“Not without issues. Every few miles, I park the truck and shake out the air filter. Does not take long to become clogged.”

“Been anywhere else, or are we your first stop?”

“I was at the Dupree farm about an hour ago. You are second. I have 12 more farms to see.”

“How are Dan and his family doing?”

“The Duprees are not doing well. Dan’s wife has asthma. With the ash blocking the roads, it was impossible to refill her medication. She died a few days ago. Dan said he thought to drive into Salina and find a funeral home, however he was not sure he would make it. He buried her out behind the house, with the help of his son.”

“Sorry to hear it, Jim.”

“Salina is worse. They stripped the stores bare; the pharmacies are empty. Still no electricity anywhere. West Star Energy plants are not working and for now their power plants are closed. Our two hospitals are not operating. There are no healthcare products or any medical supplies. Doctors can only hold patients’ hands and pray. Can’t do anything else for people needing care.”

“Are the roads clear?”

“No, I-70 is still covered with ash. Also, many abandoned cars clutter the road to Denver. Currently, they cannot remove the residue.”

“I measured 22 inches here this morning.”

“The first few days of the eruption dropped a lot of smoldering remnants. Salina’s ash depth is the same. We lost homes and businesses due to the embers causing fires. Got to the point, the Fire Department just let them burn. Even this far from the eruptions.”

The back door opened as Dr. Johnson walked in.

“Doc, meet Jim. Jim is the Farm Bureau man around these parts. He stopped by to see if we were surviving.”

“Pleased to make your acquaintance, Jim.”

“Are you from around here, Doc?”

“Doc is not from here,” Al said. “He and his family were caught in the early days of the ash storm, on I-70. He is from the Denver area.”

“Thanks to Al here,” Doc stated, “We didn’t die on the outer road.”

“You are blessed Doc,” Jim said. “Between here and Denver, there are thousands of people who suffocated attempting to travel east.”

“Doc is a veterinarian, so he has been helping with our livestock and poultry.”

“Great, we may need his services around here in the future, when we get the roads back open.”

“I would be glad to help Jim,” Doc said.

“So, Al are you and your family holding up, okay?”

“Yes. Our water has become bitter. We are straining the water from my well with a filtering system I put together. I took a couple of unused oil filters and, using PVC pipe, made a water filter. After we strain the liquid, we boil it. Doing the same with the animal’s water.”

“That is an innovative idea. I wouldn’t have thought of that.”

“Jim, how bad is Salina? You have been cagey with any details.”

“Wiped out, Al. People are not as resourceful as you are in the city. Our current problems are gangs robbing others for supplies. I wanted to warn you we expect these criminal groups will eventually branch out to the farms.”

“We suspected that may happen. What do you suggest we should do?”

“I know you won't appreciate this. I am telling rural families similar to yourselves, shoot to kill. If the gangs extend here, be aware they are armed. No use saying it any other way. Shoot first, ask questions later. The National Guard has issued an open fire order to any looters, robbers, or those showing physical force. This applies if a person is carrying any weapon. This last week, they have killed upwards of 20 people.”

“That is sad Jim. Shoot to kill. You hear that, Doc?”

“They strike more when it's dark. You may want to remain vigilant at night to keep watch. But until some roads open, they may not travel here.”

“Any relief coming from the government, State or Feds?”

“Yes, and no. We are a smaller city, so they allocated most resources to larger western cities. We have one company of National Guard soldiers. They are just trying to keep the peace. No relief efforts other than some MREs handed out daily downtown with some bottled water.”

“We have been listening to whatever news we can obtain, using our portable shortwave radio. They are reporting horror stories of killings and other unwelcome information.”

“When people become desperate, they act like animals. Al, I need to leave. Thanks for the coffee. You seem to be handling this crisis better than others.”

“We are holding our own. We are trusting God Almighty. Before you leave, I wanted to ask you. We haven’t seen any wild game lately, any news?

“You are right. Not even a rabbit, Al. I think most of the wildlife, such as the people stranded on I-70, succumbed to the ash fall and died. Sad but true. Most wildlife has vanished from the land. Also, a few cattle farmers have lost 60 to 80 percent of their herds. Just dropped dead from breathing issues. Anyhow, as previously stated, I must depart. So, hang in there Al. I wish the best for you and your loved ones.”

Al walked Jim to the door. He stood there until he started up the plow and drove out of the driveway. Al turned toward Doc.

“Know how to use a gun?”

“Yes, sir!”

“Good. My entire family knows how to shoot. Never thought it would come to this. We need to set up a guard schedule. From the east upstairs bedroom, we have an unobstructed view of the entrance to the property. We can take shifts watching. Perhaps move my deer stand closer to the road. This approach enables us to view the highway.”

“Do you have guns and ammunition, Al?”

“That we have, Doc. And we'll utilize them if necessary. From this point forward, we will always carry a handgun. We are going to place a few loaded rifles near the doors and upstairs. We usually did a lot of hunting come fall, so we always stocked up on ammunition in preparation. We will be ready if they come.”

### Chapter 37

##### John Roddenburg Reporting

##### Seven Days To Impact

##### Eden II

##### Archbishop Malachy

T

he announcer began; “People of the world, welcome to Eden II News live from our Eden II Newsroom. Here is our host, John Roddenburg.”

“Welcome America and the world. The news just continues to pour into our newsroom. The topic on everyone’s mind is the asteroid named Noelani. Enoch is here with us and will address the asteroid issue; and how the approaching asteroid relates to the Bible. What we currently know is NASA and its Planetary Defense Coordination Office, have found an incoming asteroid, 800 meters wide or a half a mile. The shape is a sphere. This will equate to 804 million metric tons of rock or 886,258,293 tons. Converted into tons of TNT, the energy released is equal to 60 gigatons. This NEO is ten times larger compared to the entire world’s nuclear arsenal.”

“To put this into perspective: an 800-meter diameter asteroid composed of stone, iron, and carbon compounds, striking the Earth at 20 kilometers a second is not an extinction event. Depending on where Noelani impacts, it could produce tsunamis of 100 kilometers or 63 miles inland into coastal regions or devastate land for 600 kilometers or 370 miles inland if the impact is over water. A land impact will create dust and ash, which could take over a year to dissipate. This will add to the ash-cloud we are presently experiencing. Enoch, our expert, is here with us.”

The camera zoomed out to capture Enoch and John

“We want to ask you a few questions, Enoch. My first question, is Noelani the ‘Second Trumpet’?”

“Absolutely John. This asteroid is… ‘The Second Trumpet’. The name they chose for the asteroid is interesting. The name Noelani means Heaven, sky, royal, majesty. NASA has named it appropriately. This asteroid is from Heaven.”

“At NASA’s press conference, a reporter suggested asking you where the asteroid will impact. I assume you have an answer to the question?”

“Yes, and no John. Governments will play with Noelani, as it completes its journey. By doing so, they may cause more destruction to the Earth. If they splinter the asteroid, the majority of the asteroid will still land in the sea; however, thousands of fragments will impact land. If this occurs; I do not know where Noelani’s fragments will impact the Earth.”

“Assuming the governments don’t play with Noelani, where will the asteroid impact?”

“This asteroid will impact Earth at 40°04 36.6 N 11°31 19.8 E. This location is between Rome and Sardegna. Sardegna is the Province of Nuoro, Italy. We find the Island in the Tyrrhenian Sea, of the Mediterranean. Impact is halfway between these two cities: 200 kilometers or 125 miles from each city. Other seriously damaged areas will be the coasts of Spain, France, Italy, and parts of Northern Africa.”

“Why will Noelani impact on the Mediterranean? Which areas you described will receive the most damage?”

“To answer your first question John, Peter the 2nd’s sanctuary, The Vatican, will be wiped out. Now, for the second part. The cities of Rome, Naples, European coastal cities such as Monaco, and other coastal cities will be leveled. The asteroid will spew several tons of matter, combined with water vapor into the atmosphere. Our scientist have this part correct. It will take close to a year to dissipate. In addition, we still must deal with the ash fall.”

“Will Noelani completely destroy the Vatican, Rome and Naples?”

“Yes, as I said before, it will level both cities.”

“Why?”

“Unfortunately, the Vatican is corrupt and tainted. Peter the 2nd, known as Kasdeja, is the demon of spirits. What was Rome will soon be a memory.”

“Enoch, we have Cardinal Cullen Mahoney with us today who will comment on this ‘Trumpet’.”

The camera zoomed out to include Cardinal Mahoney.

“Can you add to what Enoch just described Cardinal, concerning who Peter the 2ndreally is?”

“Peter the 2nd is known as Kasdeja. They attribute him as a teacher of astronomy. You can read about this demon in Enoch 8:7. He instructed the children of men, all the wicked strikes of spirits, demons, and the strikes of the embryo in the womb, so that it may pass away. We know it as abortion. Kasdeja is one of The Fallen or The One Third.”

“Scary person.”

“Yes, he is. Kasdeja has many powers, making him a powerful adversary.”

“What is your opinion Cardinal, regarding the destruction of Rome?”

“The Church has been expecting this. During the year 1139, Irish Archbishop Malachy went to Rome from Ireland to give an account of his affairs. While there, he received a strange vision concerning the future of the Church. In Malachy’s writing of his vision, the final Pope will take the title, ‘Pope Peter the Roman,’ or a derivative thereof. Based on Catholic teaching, the Apostle Peter is our first Pope. According to Malachy, another named Peter; will be the final Pope. He also predicted the destruction of the Seven Hills of Rome.”

“Will Malachy’s prophecies be fulfilled?”

“Yes, it appears so. Let me add, Kasdeja is leading the Church and will soon build a new false religion within the walls of Babylon.”

“Any comment Enoch?”

“No John. Cardinal Mahoney understands the results. He is an excellent study.”

“Enoch and Cardinal Mahoney, our technical staff has produced some numbers based on the location of impact you just gave us. We know your impact prophecy is correct. Noelani will destroy the cities you mentioned. Destruction will be a combination of tsunamis, wind impact, coupled with Earth movement.”

“The Apostle John had it right in Revelation, along with Archbishop Malachy’s visions,” Enoch answered.

“I suppose the positive aspect for our listeners, Enoch is always correct. Persons in affected areas may want to make plans to evacuate to a safer area.”

“In other news, Tahit is again broadcasting, from Salt Lake City in Utah’s state capital.”

John turned to the monitor behind him.

“Tahit.”

“We are here John. We are transmitting voice and video via satellite phone so our feed may be incomplete, so bear with us. You can see behind me, ash has been moved into piles from the capitol’s concourse and parking lot. You can also see the capitol building is black instead of white from a combination of smoke, embers, and ash.”

“Salt Lake City, with three volcanoes near the city, is buried under four feet of ash. There are only a few roads operational for emergency personnel, city workers and the military. The National Guard and other officials are reporting a third of homes and structures have burned to the ground. Officials informed us every hospital is closed. They have no medical supplies.”

“Do we have a death toll yet?”

“Officials are telling us over fifty percent of the population has died. This equates to over 100,000. The totals do not account for the suburbs, or the people stranded on highways, attempting to flee the eruptions.”

“Are there any other issues?”

“Yes, John, a serious one. There are many roaming gangs of looters and those seeking food.”

“How bad is the civil unrest?”

“The governor and the military tribune, have issued a shoot on site order to any looters breaking into homes or warehouses.”

“Have they had any skirmishes?”

“Yes, several. Last night, a gang of 12 men tried to break into a surviving Harmon Grocery Store Warehouse. The gang members shot first, according to National Guard Officers. Three escaped, two were killed, the others injured.”

“We understand the fires are dying down in the forests surrounding Salt Lake City.”

“That is true. Fortunately, firefighters and nature have them under control. However, you can still smell smoke everywhere. There is not a tree left within hundreds of miles. Trees, brush, and buildings are gone. We were able to launch a drone earlier. The video is disheartening. What you see from the aerial view of the city, is smoke and burnt-out buildings.”

“We will show it later in the show, Tahit. We have other breaking news to report.”

“I will be here, John. This is Tahit, reporting live from Salt Lake City.”

John turned back from the monitor toward the camera.

“Other countries are suffering as America. China, Japan, New Zealand, Bolivia, Chile, Russia, Italy, Greece, and North Korea. Officials from these countries state they are still burning or destroyed. The death count will continue to grow. Deaths worldwide are escalating into the millions.”

John paused, having some heartache in accepting the death tolls. Enoch, noticing he was upset, reached out to him.

“John, I know you find this difficult, reporting millions of deaths. Unfortunately, because of the times we live in, death and destruction will continue.”

“I know Enoch. However, with the constant barrage of unwelcome news and death; it is difficult to keep one's composure. Even more so, knowing more unwelcome news is coming.”

“Look at it this way, John. You are warning those in peril. Your broadcasting will have saved many lives.”

“You are right Enoch. We must keep broadcasting the truth; and hope people in harm’s way have accepted Jesus Christ.”

The Eden II logo appeared on their monitor, as Enil killed the broadcast.

### Chapter 38

##### Peter the 2nds Apartment

##### Vatican, Rome, Italy

##### Moving

P

ope Peter the 2nds, secretary looked up and saw Cardinal Richital enter his office and knew he was here to see the Pope. He stood and bowed, as he told him he would be right back. He was not gone long before he returned.

“Follow me, please.”

Richital walked down the hall, following the clergyman to the Papal Apartment. The Priest opened it then left. Richital entered the residence and closed the door for privacy.

“Welcome, Cardinal, good to see you,” Peter said.

“This is not a social call Kasdeja, I mean your Holiness. Aafre sent me here.”

“I assume Cardinal, it concerns the asteroid Enoch predicted?”

“Yes, you are correct. I have instructions to convey to you.”

“What are they?”

“To summarize, you are to order a total evacuation of the Vatican. This includes statues, paintings, artifacts, including the Obelisk in the square, and the entire Holy See library. Workers will arrive today to disassemble the Sistine Chapel ceiling and furnishings. We only have 6-7 days to complete the task.”

“Where are they going?”

“To Babylon. As you are aware, Aafre has been building a new Vatican. This new Papal State will anchor your new religion with the Muslims. The Obelisk is something people will recognize. It is going to look comforting in your new church's courtyard. We need our new Vatican structure finished and furnished from what is here.”

“Do we have a plan?”

“Definitely. Starting this afternoon, the United States will dispatch twenty C-5M Super Galaxy Cargo Planes to Fiumicino Airport in Rome. We will make a big deal of our actions to save the artifacts. Politically, the operation will be favorable to Cain.”

“Packing and moving will require a lot of effort.”

“We have workers already scheduled with moving vans, packing materials, boxes, and crates. We need your Priests, to supervise the work. You may also inform them they are going to accompany you to Babylon in Iraq. This includes most of the Swiss Guard. I plan to stay here to help you oversee the transfer. As we move the archives, stay away from the local press. I will handle the distribution of information to them. With limited time, we have much to accomplish. Within days, the entire Vatican will be reduced to rubble.”

“As you wish, Cardinal, or shall I say Ramuell?”

“Keep with the protocol, Peter. Cain has established guidelines regarding not using our real names.

“You, did it?”

“Please follow the rules.”

### Chapter 39

##### Seven Days To Impact, NASA HQ

##### Washington DC

##### 

##### Disagreement

T

he Planetary Defense Group was meeting at NASA to discuss what Eden II said in their newscast and other issues.

“Dr. Schmidt, with what Enoch said today from Eden II, do you have anything else to contribute?” Alice asked.

“Yes, I have something to add. What concerns me Alice, is Enoch’s comment concerning our military messing with Noelani. To put it differently, he shared with us that our armed forces are preparing for an assault on Noelani before it finishes its journey. The result of attempting to blow up the asteroid using missiles may cause additional catastrophic damage to people and cities. It’s a proven fact this is not an option!”

“What are you saying, Doctor?”

“We do not have a good plan. The plans we have worked on for the past few decades assumed we would have sufficient time to either push the asteroid, or possibly break it up a long ways away from Earth. This would be an effective strategy for asteroids we could track, with a year’s advance notice. Noelani is too close to use those ideas. This invader came out of nowhere. The approaching asteroid is currently hurtling towards us at a speed of approximately 196,000 miles an hour, leaving us with very little time before the imminent impact.”

“The Joint Chiefs of Staff disagree with you.”

“Ask Sheldon Rikers. He is the physicist who informed our group what may happen with messing with Noelani.”

“Sheldon, what is your take regarding our conversation. You have been quiet during most of our meeting.”

“Alice, I am not political. Right now, what I am hearing from both of you, are partisan views.”

“Do you have a suggestion?”

“Let it crash into the sea. Do nothing.”

“Why?”

“Alice, look at the facts. The Joint Chiefs are following a foolish movie script from the last century. They think we can hit it with nuclear weapons, so Noelani will explode into pebbles. Those tiny stones then burn up as they enter our atmosphere.”

Sheldon started clapping his hands.

“Yay, we saved Earth.”

“We are not here for jokes Sheldon,” Alice said sternly! “Try to be serious.”

“Did you not hear the seriousness in my voice? The Joint Chiefs plan won't succeed. You may hit it. You might cause an explosion. However, the mass of Noelani is a mountain. All we can achieve is to send thousands of destructive fragments in our gravitational orbit and others headed directly to Earth. The majority of the asteroid is going to maintain its current course.”

Sheldon was getting revved up, she could tell.

Those thousands of pebbles will have an effect on various places around the world. They will wipe out half the satellites orbiting Earth. The destruction will be ten times worse than Noelani, only impacting the sea, period! The gravity of the asteroid will hold onto those shards near the main body. This means debris from the asteroid will impact land in thousands of areas.

The door opened as General Stoups entered. He sat down at the conference table and addressed Alice.

“Alice, where are we on this asteroids tracking data? Before you answer, China, Space Z and the Air Force are getting ready to launch the Starship, using a Big Eagle Rocket. The crew plans to launch into Earth's orbit several warheads. Noelani is following the ‘Atens orbit,’ which we can track. The weapons have a ten-thousand-mile range operating inside the emptiness of space. When the path of Noelani is within range, we will release the missiles.

“I don’t think…”

“Stop, Alice. Let me finish. NASA will help coordinate the flight patterns. Now, you are permitted to talk.”

“Sheldon and Doctor Schmidt believe you will cause a larger problem with the missile strike. Are you able to provide an explanation as to why it is not possible for us to allow Noelani to crash into the sea?”

“Those at the top who are above you and my paygrades have already given me orders.” They … call the shots. Attempting to blow up Noelani will be the operation. The day Noelani is to arrive, we will blow it up or change its course. End of story. Get your people calculating the math. We need to maximize the impact.”

### Chapter 40

##### Conference Room, Nebuchadnezzar II Tower

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Target Practice

J

amal got Cain's attention as he held the phone in his hands. “Gadreel, I mean, General David Stoups is on the line, Cain. He just notified NASA in DC of our plans.”

“Put him on the speakerphone.”

Jamal pushed the speaker button on the conference call unit and transferred the call from his mobile device.

“General, you’re on our conference room speaker phone, with Cain and myself.”

“Hello Cain, I just left NASA. As you instructed us, I gave them their orders.”

“How did they take it?”

“Alice and her group of scientists all agree we are making a mistake.”

“Perhaps, but it's necessary for us to observe how missiles respond in space. Good target practice, preparing for our attack on New Jerusalem. Hitting Noelani with these warheads will give us an idea of how much destructive power we need to put in orbit later. In addition, if we are able to successfully divert the trajectory of this asteroid, it could potentially have a significant impact on the fulfillment of prophecy. If the rules were to be altered, there is a possibility that the council's plans could be disrupted. It is possible that, with some fortunate circumstances, we can slowly erode Enoch and Elijah's incessant belief in the unwavering righteousness of God.”

“Cain, we understand your motives, but Alice and her people may be correct!”

“We are done with this subject, General. Now, onto another issue. Can you tell me if you have completed the arrangements for the Vatican evacuation?”

“Yes, we have. Cardinal Ritchital met with Peter the 2nd this morning. Packing is underway and our crews have arrived to remove the artifacts and the Sistine Chapel. As we speak, several Air Force transport planes landed earlier today at Fiumicino Airport.”

“Any issues flying, with the ash-cloud still circling the Earth?”

“No, the ash-cloud is up pretty high now. We can soar at 15,000 feet, and the pilots say aviation is not too difficult with instrument aided navigation.”

“Thanks for handling the project. Relocating the Vatican is a priority. Enhances Peter's image in people's eyes. Anything else?”

“Our moving military assets are going well. We have moved 400,000 American soldiers to Kuwait and Iraq. We told the press, moving our troops is a move to protect New Babylon and our world leaders here.”

“You did an excellent job, General.”

### Chapter 41

##### Vacant Home

##### Rome, Italy

##### The Letter

L

uke, Mauvad and Jim, the recently rescued RV repair man, were in a vacant home in Rome. Enoch sent them to recover a letter written 2,000 years ago before they moved it to Babylon. Mauvad was overseeing the operation.

“Luke, the Holy See is using trucks from Sixt Rentals,” Mauvad stated. “The rental vehicle we are looking for has a vehicle number of CX8745. It is scheduled to leave the loading area at the Vatican at 4:00 p.m.”

“No one told us what we were after before we left Eden II. What are we looking for?”

“It is a letter, Luke, packed in a container of various correspondence from 30 AD. Our goal is to steal the entire crate. Our plan is to abandon the hijacked truck and bring the crate back here. These files have hermetic seals and are filled with the inert gas argon. Our job is to sort through the documents, remove the one we are looking for, then return to Eden II. Transports have been arranged to pick us up here. Before we go, we will notify the Vatican and tell them where their crate is.”

“Which container, Mauvad?”

“It is marked PA334, or Papal Archives 334. This container is the one a priest on our side informed us about. He'll be in the truck's passenger seat. We are to take him with us, or they may kill him. For now, we need to gather our things and drive to the rendezvous point. Traffic is a mess, since everyone is trying to escape Rome before Noelani arrives.”

Luke, Jim and Mauvad went to the underground garage, then loaded up their rental van. They were a motley crew. Luke was an advertising executive, Jim a repairman, and Mauvad was former President of Iran. The good news is Mauvad was a combat soldier in Iran before becoming a politician. He knew how to handle himself.

Mauvad had concerns with his crew. As they were placing their assault weapons into the van, he turned toward Luke.

“Are you certain you can use a gun?”

“I may be a Madison Avenue executive, but guns are a hobby of mine. I even have a New York carry permit! So, to answer your question, have no doubt, I can handle a gun.”

“Before you ask me the same question,” Jim smiled, “I am a hillbilly Mauvad. Now, what is your take?”

“With that description of who you are, Jim, I am sure you know how to handle firearms,” Mauvad said, laughing at Jim’s redneck comment.

The diverse group loaded into the vehicle. Mauvad drove toward Fiumicino Airport. Their plan was to intercept the Sixt Rentals moving truck, using a side road leading to the air-freight gates.

Mauvad’s burner phone beeped with a text message. He read it, then passed it back to Luke with instructions.

“Luke, text Eden II. Tell them we need to be picked up at the air-freight rendezvous point.”

“Why?” He asked, his voice filled with curiosity.

“Just do it, Luke, then I will explain.”

Luke messaged Enil’s special number for communications and gave the phone back to Mauvad as he asked about the change of plans.

“Why the change in our rendezvous point?”

“Our priest texted me. The moving van has a three car police escort. We have to neutralize them. They have radios. Once we engage them, they are going to report the attempted hijack. I will guess we only have ten minutes or fewer to deal with the police, find the crate and retrieve the letter before reinforcements arrive.”

“Are we going to kill them?”

“If we must. Depends on how much resistance we encounter.”

Mauvad pulled off the highway, taking the exit, which led to the air-freight area of the airport. He drove a quarter mile short of the gate entrance, where they saw the US C-5M Super Galaxy cargo planes parked. Pulling off onto the shoulder, Mauvad put the van in park, exited, and lifted the hood. Going to the back, he opened the rear doors, removed the spare tire, then laid it by the driver’s side rear tire.

“Jim, jack the van up and remove the wheel,” Mauvad instructed.

“Luke, get behind the open cargo door closest to the fence. Be ready. When I tell you, shoot out the tires of the escort vehicles, then the cargo truck. I will fire through the lead escort police car windows to take out the driver.”

Jim raised the minivan and removed the tire and laid it on the ground.

“Jim,” Mauvad instructed, “stand by the truck staring at the tire, acting confused. Act clueless. When you spot them approaching, position yourself in the middle of the street and wave your hands. Look convincing, like you are in distress.”

“I'm the decoy?”

“You are the bait. Put your sidearm under your shirt. You may need it.”

Jim stood staring at the jacked-up van as several vehicles drove by. They then saw the lead police car. They were easy to spot. Lamborghini Huracán Polizi’s were the best automobiles ever manufactured for speed and hand ability. Mauvad told Jim to get ready.

“Showtime, Jim. Wave your arms and block the road.”

Jim, like a good redneck, stood in the street blocking the approach of the law enforcement car, frantically waving his hands acting stressed. As the lead car approached, it reduced speed, just like the truck. The two police escort cars following the moving van also slowed and stopped. The police officer sitting in the passenger side of the first car rolled down his window and stuck his head out, screaming in Italian.

“Ottenere fuori strada,” it meant, get out of the way.

Jim just stood there. Mauvad came from around the front of the van, pointing his 12-shell assault rifle at the face of the officer sitting in the passenger seat in the police vehicle. He shouted an order in Italian.

“Ferma l'auto,” translated; ‘get out of the car.’

The driver ignored the directive and started to turn the steering wheel to get past Jim. Mauvad pulled the trigger of his weapon as the car's glass shattered. Both police officers were injured. The truck attempted the same maneuver. With a single shot, Mauvad shattered the windshield, leaving the driver injured and the scent of gunpowder in the air. The truck rolled to the left, blocking traffic both ways, then stopped as it crashed into another car. Luke crouched behind their van, shooting at the other two police cars.

Mauvad moved to the opposite side of the disabled truck, walking cautiously down its side. When he was in range, he took out the tires of one vehicle and one officer with a quick three burst shot. The policeman sustained a shoulder wound. Jim, behind Mauvad, ran ahead, aiming his gun at the other police officer who had exited the car. He hit the ground, firing, as his bullet penetrated another officer’s leg.

Two police officers from the third escort car firing upon Mauvad’s team dropped their firearms and raised their hands. They surrendered. In Italian, Mauvad, with his weapon pointed at them, ordered the officers to the back of the truck. Jim retrieved a bolt cutter, walked over to break the lock and seal, then lifted the cargo door.

Mauvad told the police officers in Italian to climb into the moving van with Jim to help unload the boxes. After six containers, they found the one they hoped contained the letter. Using a tire iron, Jim pried off the top.

The crate contained multiple individual cases labeled in Greek, which detailed their contents. Mauvad went through the boxes one by one. When he discovered the object, he removed the sealed box from the crate. He verified this was the correct item by sliding back the cover and examining what was inside. Satisfied, he instructed Luke.

“Text our transport.”

Mauvad turned to the law enforcement officers and in Italian told them it’s over and they were leaving. He instructed them to pick up their wounded and place them in the truck. Jim retrieved a first aid kit and a flashlight from one police car’s trunk. He threw those into the van as he closed the door and locked the release lever to secure it.

The transports showed up instantly. Jim got the clergyman ready to load. Both doors of the transport opened as the approaching sirens grew closer. The three commandos and priest stepped into the transport as the opening automatically closed. They had left long before the police arrived. Mauvad held the box tightly. Enoch will be pleased.

### Chapter 42

##### Conference Room

##### Eden II

##### Tiberius Caesar Divi Augusti Filius Augustus

E

noch walked into the conference room where Luke, Jim and Mauvad were sitting. Enoch had a smile on his face because he knew they were successful.

“I take it, you… have it?”

Mauvad proudly took the sealed container out of his lap and passed it across the table to Enoch. Cardinal Mahoney accompanied by John arrived. As they settled into their seats, their eyes remained fixed on the captivating box. Cardinal Mahoney was excited and pleased.

“Mauvad, Luke, Jim, excellent job,” Enoch stated. “How difficult was it to recover?”

Mauvad explained they wounded some of the officers and the truck driver, but were able to rescue the priest. He is here at Eden II. Veronica was getting him situated.

“More collateral damage,” John commented with a frown on his face.

“We did not expect them to have a security detail following the truck,” Enoch said. “I understand, John, you have difficulty with people being hurt during these times. It was unavoidable. They must have known how valuable the contents of the items they were moving were. Someone thought it was necessary to protect this particular vehicle using a police escort.”

“What was so important to retrieve from the van to injure so many?” John asked.

Not answering the question, Enoch pushed the box toward Cardinal Mahoney.

“Let’s let the Cardinal explain the contents and their importance to us that we would risk the lives of Jim, Luke, and Mauvad.”

Cardinal Mahoney slid the wooden cover off by sliding it down the grooves. He placed the cover on the table and tilted the clear glass part toward him as he explained the technology of the box.

“This is a hermetically sealed letter. They line the container with carbon fiber, with a glass top allowing you to see the contents. They make the surface an inch thick of shatterproof glass. This allows a person to view the document without removing it. Sealing of older manuscripts in a sealed argon gas container is done to preserve the document for future generations.”

He showed everyone the glass area with the three pages of the message inside, side by side.

“So… what does it say, Cardinal Mahoney?” Mauvad asked.

“Something special Mauvad. It is a letter written in Latin, addressed to Tiberius Caesar Divi Augusti Filius Augustus. This document is dated June of 36 AD.”

“Who wrote it?”

“Pontius Pilatus, Prefect of Judea.”

“You have my attention, Cardinal,” John said.

“John, let me give you a history lesson. There is a letter penned by Pilatus to Tiberius. This written account describes the crucifixion of Jesus and issues with his death. The internet stories state a letter is authentic, and the Library of the Vatican holds a copy. There was a copy in the Vatican’s possession. We have it now. However, the interpretations and claims of what the message conveys is to sow dissent, by Peter the 2nd when he takes control over the Catholic Church.”

“I like a good mystery,” Luke commented.

“Yes, a puzzle it is. I will translate the letter for you.”

Cardinal Mahoney looked at the correspondence through the glass cover.

“This letter is addressed to Tiberius, using the standard salutations and greetings used at the time. I will also be paraphrasing. The correspondence is written in ancient Latin. It would sound like gibberish if I translated each word into English. As I stated earlier, the document is dated AD IV Kal. Julias XXXVI.”

“You have asked me to investigate this Jesus, Son of Joseph of Nazareth issue, who was crucified for sedition. The specific information you were looking for, did this man resurrect and ascend to what the Jews and his followers call Heaven?”

“I am pleased to notify you, Jesus rising from the dead is not true, and we have proven the allegations are lies. We have exhausted any possibilities, this resurrection did or could have occurred.”

“At your request, I sent my personal officer with his command to root out the sources of these rumors. The summary of the report I received from him is as follows:”

“The remains were handed over to a Jew, Joseph of Arimathea. The commander of the Roman soldiers and his command at the cross confirmed Jesus’s death. The lance, as is custom, was thrust into the side of the crucified man, Jesus of Nazareth, by one of his men. It was verified the body bled out from the spear.”

“According to Joseph of Arimathea, the dead body of the man identified as Jesus of Joseph of Nazareth was placed in a tomb he owned. He was prepared for burial by his mother Mary, daughter of Joachim, and the woman called Mary of Magdala. As is their custom, they washed the body, anointed it, and wrapped it, before placement in the burial site. They completed the burial before nightfall, as they traditionally do. The tomb was then sealed.”

“On Sunday morning, this woman, Mary of Magdala, allegedly found the grave empty. Witnesses and additional individuals who knew her, we interviewed. They told us she reported the vacant tomb to one of his followers, Simon Petros or Peter. She claims the Messiah was no longer in the tomb. Later she tells her friends, Jesus has resurrected.”

“The rest of the rumored story goes, this supposed resurrected Jesus appeared to numerous individuals. We have interviewed over one-thousand people with personal knowledge of Jesus and those who followed him. A few said they repeated the narrative only because one of his followers told them the story. They never saw the man alive after his death.”

“We finally caught up with one of them in Jerusalem. James Alpheus, called, James the lesser.”

“After many intense interrogations, he confessed, he and the disciples stole Jesus' remains from the tomb. They took the corpse to another place, where they buried him. The informer once again, after persuasive interrogation, led us to where the body was buried. We had the remains exhumed and confirmed.”

“I instructed my Centurion; to return the recovered body to Joseph Ben Caiaphas, the Jewish High Priest. He and the Sanhedrin of ‘The Temple,’ took custody of the body. They had Jesus' remains buried again. We understand the deceased is now in an unmarked grave.”

“The man, the lesser, gave us names of some of his followers and the two women involved. We are diligently searching for these people who spread this false story. We feel they have left the country and live elsewhere. Other than the man named Lesser James, we have not found the disciples of Jesus. We will continue to seek out these individuals, then get rid of them once they are found. Hopefully, this will dispel the rumors of his divine life.”

“Details of the interviews of people associated with Jesus, or who were telling the rumor, are attached. Each interview was documented carefully.”

“Included with this document, you will find other areas of discussion from Judea.”

“I humbly submit this report.”

“Pilate signs the letter with his signature.”

“Wow,” John exclaimed! “I was not aware this letter existed.”

“It does John. Now you understand why we wanted to take the document from them. Historically, we are aware that Pilate is under a lot of pressure from Rome to stop this rumor. We have no doubt, he sent out investigators and caused harm to numerous people doing so. Pilate had to compose the letter to assure his own safety and well-being. Therefore, we know his correspondence is a false doctrine. However, the document's contents would deceive many had the letter been made public. The document is better kept here. You may note Pilate died shortly after writing this letter.”

“Since we are debating the subject of writings, Cardinal Mahoney, do you know why the book of Enoch is not a part of the Bible?” John asked. “

“To begin with, Athanasius of Alexandria in 367 AD selected the 27 books of the New Testament. The collection of twenty-seven books was confirmed in the councils of Hippo in 393, and Carthage in 397. Before that, we have the First Council of Nicaea in 325 AD, which was overseen by the emperor Constantine the Great, or his formal title, Flavius Valerius Aurelius Constantinus Augustus, and the 1,800 bishops he invited. A large number are of the belief Constantine used his influence over the Roman Empire, renamed it the Holy Roman Empire. He later transferred Rome's authority to the Holy Roman Empire, as the ultimate authority on Canon and the Bible. He also oversaw the creation of holidays and specific dates, such as the arrival of Christ or Christmas, which is the last day of the Pagan Roman Winter Festival. This action by him, many feel was done to appease the empire's citizens and help them accept a different God. We now know Christ's birth was probably in the spring.”

“The main reason for dismissing the Scripture of Enoch was its relation to the Trinity. A large number of the church authorities desired to promote the Trinity concept. Adoption of The Divine Trio would be in jeopardy. The text of Enoch openly disputes the Trinity. Constantine and the ecclesiastics rallied against the Gnostics and quashed their movement. This also includes other books which were discarded. The written evidence of Jude quotes the written existence of Enoch. There are many references to Enoch in the Bible, such as Enoch walked with God and is taken to Heaven. So why not include the book? Simply because Enoch tells us we can know the truth and find God on our own without intersession of a priest, which the 1800 religious leaders wished for.”

“The Gnostic apologist states, Enoch had found and experience God face-to-face, something which Gnostics strived to have the conference adopt. The Church at Nicene opposed the followers of Gnosticism. Experiencing God was taboo. Putting a stamp of approval upon the wild tales of Enoch would have too many people encountering God themselves, instead of attending their place of worship and being told what to believe.”

“When copies of Enoch's manuscript were found in the Dead Sea Scrolls, many Biblical scholars started teaching the holy writings. The details filled the gaps from the Old Testament stories, like the Nephilim and the garden story. Today, although this text is not a part of the protestant or Catholic version of the Bible, numerous individuals study and accept its contents. The same goes for Phillip's written work and other excluded writings.”

“Following up on history, The First Council of Constantinople convened in 381 AD, upheld the Nicene Creed, and the exclusion of the book of Enoch, as other books. Original Greek editions of the holy scriptures contain several writings not included in the Bible we know of today. This was held up as Canon under Flavius Theodosius Augustus, or the Great Theodosius. He decreed that the Christianity of Nicaea, or the Holy Roman Church, was the national religion.”

“One other note. The Book of Enoch is included in several variants of the Bible, just not the Catholic or Protestant variants. The volume of Enoch is in the new revised King James, and of course, the Ethiopian Bible.”

“Additionally, in today's world, we have over sixty variations of the Bible. We have the 'word for word', or the King James Version, New Revised King James Version, all based on original Greek and Aramaic translations. Then there is the ‘meaning to meaning’ which is the New International Bibles. Also, we have what is called ‘paraphrased versions’ such as the Living Bible. They are all different. Then the Catholics have seven additional books in the Old Testament but maintain only twenty-seven in the Christian Scriptures as their Protestant counterparts. These additional books give credence to their teachings about purgatory and other Canon.”

“Would you agree with my assessment, Enoch?”

Enoch grinned mischievously at Mahoney, his eyes glinting with amusement.

“Cardinal Mahoney, I embodied those phrases, and others transcribed them from my words. The book of Enoch is my gospel.”

Everyone seemed inspired by Enoch’s comment as the group moved on to other topics.

### Chapter 43

##### NORAD, Now Known As,

##### Aeronautical Defense Command (ADC)

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Fragments

T

he oversized tracking screen on the wall at Babylon's aeronautical defense control room had been moved from NORAD's Colorado Springs command center prior to the volcano's eruptions. Their screens showed in real-time Noelani racing toward Earth. It also displayed the orbiting platform for the nuclear-tipped missiles Space Z sent into orbit. There were twelve warheads ready to launch. Major Rickenbacker turned to face General Stoups, his stern expression showing the gravity of the situation as he updated him.

“Sir, we are three minutes to launch. Noelani is nearing the ten-thousand-mile mark from our atmosphere. Everything is a go from here.”

“Keep me informed, Major. What we are attempting today is important. Worldwide, people are counting on our operation to be successful.”

Stoups wanted to express his skepticism, knowing that their plan would inevitably end in failure. As a test mission, Cain was carefully evaluating Noelani to establish whether launching nuclear missiles and achieving a successful hit on a space target were possible. No, Noelani will make a significant impact on Earth's environment. Prophecy is unchangeable; all they can do is tweak it. The animated screen displayed the gradual convergence of Earth and Noelani.

“One minute to engagement,” Major Rickenbacker said.

Stoups observed as a Captain opened his control switch and pressed his lever to the on position. Another officer flipped his cover up as he switched his toggle on. As everyone anxiously waited for the Major's launch command, the final launching switch was opened.

“On my command,” he said.

An electronic voice over the intercom started counting down.

“10, 9, 8, 7, 6, 5, 4, 3, 2, 1.”

“Commencing launch sequence,” the Major barked while maintaining his gaze on the screen.

Another officer activated the launch sequence by flipping the final toggle. Twelve blips from a single larger solid object started toward the asteroid Noelani at 22,000 miles per hour. Rickenbacker continued to verbalize the sequences.

“Thirty seconds to impact…, twenty…, ten.”

The screen burst into a blinking chaos as the rockets hit the asteroid. The results were verbalized by various specialist in the operations room.

“All warheads have hit simultaneously. Do we have an assessment?”

The screen zoomed in on the asteroid blip. The asteroid looked like an enormous ball, surrounded by hundreds of balloons. Fragments were everywhere.

“Major, as best we can tell, Noelani had a shallow crust,” a technician said. “The crust has disengaged from the core of the asteroid.”

“What is the density of Noelani now?”

“About 85 to 90 percent of its original size.”

“What of the fragments?”

“We are tracking measurements, ranging from 100 meters to larger pieces up to 600 meters. The issue we are seeing is that the pieces are not curved like the main core of Noelani. Some of these flat objects are enormous. We are not sure how these flat parts of Noelani’s crust will react once they enter our atmosphere. They are moving similar to a frisbee’s rotation toward Earths atmosphere and near orbits.”

A different specialist screamed out something he just noticed.

“A fragment has just hit the Chinese space station. We are getting their mayday calls!”

“We have lost several satellites, sir,” a second technician said.

The display changed to satellite orbits, and you could see red X’s appearing like popcorn. With no warning, their display went black.

“What just happened?” Major Rickenbacker shouted!

“We lost our military GPS satellites, sir. We are not picking up a signal.”

“Can’t we switch over to other communication devices?”

“The system does it automatically, sir. We are receiving nothing.”

“Spy surveillance satellites, anything?”

“No sir. We have absolutely nothing. We no longer have, nor does any other country have eyes in orbit, monitoring the Earth. We are blind.”

Stoups stood and gave an order to Rickenbacker.

“Get me data as soon as you can. I need to assess our situation.”

“Yes Sir, General Stoups, sir.”

The Major turned back toward his control console and stated to his command.

“Transition to video and radar equipment stationed on the ground.”

The screen came alive with telescopic footage on one side, with ground radar on the other.

From video telescopes stationed on the ground, they saw Noelani's fireball enter the atmosphere. They could see other streaks of light coming across the horizon caused by the fragments.

“General Stoups,” the Major said grimly, “Noelani's forceful impact has sent waves crashing against the shores of Italy, near the coast.”

Gadreel consulted a set of numbers he had on a piece of paper. He thought to himself, ‘exactly where Enoch predicted. Well Cain, you created chaos as usual, a big mess!’

### Chapter 44

##### Operations Room

##### Eden II

##### Tracking Fragments

J

ohn was in the operations room with Enil monitoring the damage caused by Cain and his generals nuclear warheads strike. “Enil, what’s the damage so far?” John asked.

“Up to this point, as far as we can establish, no communication satellites were annihilated. 777 satellites remain operational. 710 Earth observation satellites were destroyed, close to half of the technology satellites are currently operational, 112 confirmed destroyed. Navigation and positioning satellites, 137 demolished, as for space and science satellites, 85 demolished. All military satellites are wiped out.”

“In summary, John, every defense satellite and two space stations are gone. All orbiting telescopes are annihilated. Fragments traveled away from the main body of the asteroid and eliminated them. Surprisingly, all communications satellites are still operational. However, GPS satellites were annihilated, both military and commercial.”

“Do we have impact information yet?” John anxiously asked.

“Yes, we do with some surprises. Destruction reports from cities worldwide are coming at us quickly. This might be of interest. The Hat Creek Observatory, found near the Cascade Mountains just north of Lassen Peak in California, has been ravaged by a fragment. It was the largest SETI installation in the world. They listen for possible alien life signals coming from space. Space launch areas have been devastated in America, China, and Russia from fragments. Its seems as if these fragments are being directed. Sad news in America. New Jersey, and parts of New York City, are reporting severe damage from a fragment. Multiple fragments have impacted the boroughs of Manhattan, Harlem, and the Bronx. Washington DC’s Capitol building, the Mall, the Washington Monument, several museums, and many other buildings are destroyed. Various cities in the Southeast were also hit. Atlanta, Tallahassee, Jacksonville, and other less populated cities sustained severe damage.”

“In Europe, there are reports of impacts from fragments from Russia, France, Spain, and England. The Asian continent lost a couple of smaller cities in rural areas. There was a direct hit in Central Africa. Johannesburg is over fifty percent destroyed. In South America, they lost parts of two major urban areas, Rio and several smaller urban centers in Brazil and Buenos Aires in Argentina.”

“The Eastern Italian coast and Rome were leveled, per early reports. There are also global damage assessments in smaller populated areas. So, you are aware, John, our printers are continuously spitting information from our hacks of news agencies and government computer systems worldwide.”

“Thanks, Enil. I assume we still have the capability to broadcast?”

“Yes, we can. For whatever reason, none of the orbiting communication equipment was even affected.”

Listening to the reports from Enil, Enoch commented on the conversation.

“Communication Satellites were meant to be kept available per Gabriel. All military and any other tracking mechanism in space were to be destroyed by fragments from Noelani, along with ground-based satellite receivers.”

John's mouth almost fell to the floor.

“This was done by Gabriel?” John asked as he was shaking his head in disbelief.

“Not him personally. He instructed Elijah to do so with God’s blessing.”

“Any particular reason why?”

“To not give any advantage to Cain and his plans. Without GPS satellites, no countries missiles will operate correctly. A country that plans to invade another will have to use land-based bombers as they did in World War II. Until they get new satellites up in orbit, they are helpless.”

“Are we going to replace our weather satellites?”

“No need. Mostly, life is returning to the 1950s before we had this technology.”

“Could you tell me why Elijah or Gabriel saved communications?” John asked, searching for answers that made sense to him.

“To fulfill fate, John. Prophecy states every person in the world will see Jesus’ return to Earth. We must have communications satellites for this to occur. In addition, we need you and those here at Eden II to continue broadcasting until this day arrives.”

“Did someone thoroughly plan and organize every aspect of the end times?”

“Yes, heaven did. Continue studying Daniel and Revelations. In synopsis form, everything in God’s plan for ‘The Time of Sorrows’ is there.”

“We're receiving reports about the effects of Noelani's impact,” Enil stated. “Impact is exactly where you said it will be, Enoch. Rome and Naples were both destroyed. Both cities were wiped off the face of the Earth.”

“It is time to write a new chapter of human history,” Enoch said. “Like the flood story, humanity embarks on a fresh chapter. The new chapter is far from finished.”

The

Third

Trumpet

A statue of a person holding a ball

Description automatically generated with low confidence

### Chapter 45

##### Rashtrapati Bhavan, Conference Room

##### New Delhi, India

##### Pressure

P

resident Gireesh was surrounded by who he thought were allies of India until this Witness issue began. American President Robert Cain, Premier of China Yuan Kwan, President of the Russian Alliance Vladimir Leshev, Ayatollah of Iran, Shahin Shasahvar, Prime Minister of Germany George Schmitt, and President of Italy, Mario DeEnbetti attended. The English Prime Minister, Pakistan’s President, and Japanese Minister could not attend. The richest man in the world, Aafre Waldger, sat in attendance. President Gireesh and his Prime Minister, Naahbi Balakrishnan, were alone against them. The industrialist Waldger addressed them.

“Today, we are a guest of President Gireesh and Prime Minister Naahbi to discuss the sovereign country of India’s place within the New World Order. As we know, the Alien Witnesses have unleashed havoc upon humanity. Close to half a billion people have died since they arrived on the international scene. Earthquakes, hurricanes, volcanic eruptions, and even an asteroid. They are not through with their destruction.”

Aafre turned toward Gireesh, looking into his eyes.

“Nine powerful nations pledged aid for countries devastated by extraterrestrial terrorists and vowed to fight against the otherworldly beings. India, President Gireesh and Prime Minister Naahbi, we hope you will become the tenth member of our pact, and agree with our shared goals and leadership.”

“The advantages include mutual security from our enemies, collective resources, common laws and a seat at the table setting future policy. The financial collapse of global commerce has affected India. By forging a partnership, we have managed to pull it back together. The identity chipping of humanity is working, and criminals no longer rule the world. We can ensure every person with a chip has enough credits to buy food, receive medical services, have a fulfilling job for a prosperous life.”

“Statistics tell us that before the Alien Witnesses arrived, India's rate of impoverishment hovered near 22 percent. This past year, your poverty levels have increased to 30 percent. Should you choose to opt out of the New World Order, assets of our combined countries will not be coming to India. We must protect our allies’ interests under our protection. Our offer to your country is an invitation, not a threat. Your trade deficit is 800 billion dollars. Of that, 12 percent alone comes from America. China is next, and the list goes on. We are aware your government, your parliament, a bicameral legislature comprising the Rajya Sabha and the Lok Sabha, wants India to stay a neutral country. They need to be persuaded otherwise.”

“The fragments of the Asteroid Noelani cost India over a million people. The next one will be worse. These Alien Witnesses have powers designed to destroy us. These two aliens actions are the catalyst which prompted nine countries to form an alliance. If you would, Mr. President and Prime Minister, give us your thoughts regarding India joining our team.”

Gireesh thought he may regret what he was about to say. However, people from India have always been expert negotiators.

“Before we respond, Aafre, what will happen to my country, assuming India does not accept your invitation?”

Gireesh judged their nonverbal inflections. Cain's countenance contorted in anger, while Kwan was turning from yellow to red. Aafre always had a stone-cold poker face with no emotion.

“I already informed you of what would occur, Gireesh,” Aafre stated. “We need to place our assets with those who have shared objectives. For our organization, it is a business decision, strength in numbers.”

“Will you invade our country?”

“Unless you disrupt our business or goals, there is no need to intervene.”

‘Right,’ Gireesh thought. ‘You already assassinated leaders to get your people into positions of power led by Kali, reigning Lord of the Kali Yuga, Satan in Western Jargon.’ He put aside his thoughts and replied.

“I understand your position, Aafre, and those assembled here. We would prefer to stay neutral. We leave everyone alone and it's business as usual.”

“Let's be straightforward, Gireesh. Your military, combined with your reserves, number two million soldiers. You are a nuclear power. You pose a risk to any of us, were you to start a war. We would prefer you to be a friend rather than a foe.”

“Aafre, your statement has a threatening tone towards India, doesn't it?”

“What would you like, Mr. President? Lay out your cards on the table. We have. What are we missing? Tell us. We will listen.”

‘Aafre’s good; he wants something,’ Gireesh thought.

“Aafre, we are not comfortable with what you are planning. We were once part of the British Empire, similar to Pakistan. We fought hard for independence. Now you are asking India to relinquish it.”

“Our 10-nation coalition, Mr. President, is a pyramid of influence. Under your control, there will be numerous countries that will answer to you, including Pakistan. Regardless of Pakistan’s political positions, they are on board. In addition, Nepal, Bhutan, Bangladesh, Birma (Myanmar) will fall under your banner.”

“What about our armed forces? Are we going to continue to control our significant military assets?”

“Yes, and no. If these aliens Enoch and Elijah, and their kind arrive with others like them, to try taking the world from us … absolutely… we expect your military to fight alongside us.”

‘Now, the true reason they are here,’ Gireesh realized.

“Isn’t this alien force which will supposedly attack the entire globe, the leader of the Christians, named Jesus?”

Gireesh was getting to Aafre as the use of the name Jesus made his poker face twitch. He spoke louder this time, as he replied to Gireesh’s comment. His monotone gone.

“No! Jesus is dead! We will engage in a battle against a group who ruled the Earth thousands of years ago. The Sumerians chronicled their presence. They want our resources. They plan to take them if we do not resist. We can, and are determined to, defend against their invasion, with or without India.”

“This makes sense, Aafre. Now I understand your needs. You should have mentioned this earlier. We intend to bring your offer to the Rajya Sabha, and the Lok Sabha. Considering they agree with your ideas, India will join your coalition. Our government is waiting for the details of our meeting. We will be able to arrange a vote quickly once I address their concerns.”

“Thank you for your hospitality,” Cain said. “We appreciate your efforts.”

Gireesh and his Prime Minister Naahbi stood to leave, as he left them with an open-ended comment.

“We will speak again gentlemen, the day after tomorrow, assuming we can gather the interested parties together.”

### Chapter 46

##### Babylon Delegation Suite, Leela Palace Hotel

##### New Delhi, India

##### Did Not Go Our Way

A

afre and Jordan arrived in Cain’s suite as he poured himself a drink. Cain spoke using their ancestral speech. “This room, and everyone else’s, are bugged. We should only speak our native language Adamec, from before. Our words will sound like gibberish to them.”

“How did the meeting go?” Jordan asked.

“As well as could be expected,” Cain replied. “The President is an excellent negotiator, yet he seems distant to our group. Neither Gireesh, nor the Prime Minister, wish to be subordinate to anyone. I thought he was a Hindu, but he brought up Jesus during the meeting.”

“He feels threatened by us, and … he should,” Aafre said.

“We have several of the 200 in his government,” Jordan reminded them. “We have the ability, as we did in Russia and China, to create a situation resulting in a change of leadership. What is your take, Cain?”

“Adding India to our order can wait, as we are not in a hurry. We have the capacity to cut India off economically anytime we wish, which will place their country into chaos. Their poverty rate is already high and expanding. Our coalition can raise India’s poverty level significantly by pulling our resources for six months or so. They will come begging for our help.”

Cain finished his drink and made another as Aafre commented.

“Cain, I think he will capitulate.”

“You are usually not wrong, Aafre, seldom anyway. I agree with your assessment.”

“Let’s try this,” Jordan said. “Say today he balks. We do nothing. After six months, we make another attempt. If he balks again, assassinate him and his Prime Minister. In the interim, we will use our influence to stir up the populace against them using economics. That is your area, Aafre. What do you think?”

“We need their military to join us. One individual from their leadership ranks is one of us. Let’s wait and see what response President Gireesh gives us the day after tomorrow. I am inclined to project their answer. The President and Prime Minister want absolute power, so India will join us.”

“Fine with me,” Cain said.

“The Governor of Texas is in the news today,” Jordan said. “He is asking other governors to meet, to vote on having a constitutional convention. They do not need the legislature to convene one. Of course, there is no longer a Congress since the massacre. We think his actions are only noise and a power play.”

“Does the governor have any supporters backing his idea?” Aafre asked.

“A few southern states and the eastern seaboard. Say… 14-16 allies.”

“He needs what, 33 to agree to a Constitutional Convention?” Cain stated to no one in particular.

“You are correct, Cain,” Jordan commented. “I doubt he can put a coalition together. The country is under Martial Law, and we are sending needed supplies to the affected areas. People desire our aid. They definitely won't want anyone to rock their boat. Muslims will soon dominate America and the rules of law will change. Also, Enoch and Elijah are not through destroying it.”

“He needs to have an accident,” Aafre said. The other governors will read between the lines and comply.”

“I agree,” Jordan voted.

“Cain, what is your perspective?” Aafre asked.

“Do what you want. Make it something like choking to death, heart attack or anything not suspicious. Do not shoot him. However, if he is just blowing smoke, don’t kill him.”

### Chapter 47

##### President Gireesh Arya, Private Office Rashtrapati Bhavan

##### New Delhi, India

##### Dictator

G

ireesh and Naahbi Balakrishnan were in Gireesh’s office, waiting for the leaders of Lok Sabha and Rajya Sabha to discuss Cain's proposal. Naahbi addressed Gireesh. “They are a forceful group of men, aren’t they?”

“They are ruling the Earth. With their current alliances and power, they can. Today was supposed to be an economic summit, to deal with the damage caused by the Witnesses and the collapse of commerce. Instead, we are invited to a private meeting, blackmailing us to give over our sovereignty. Their offer and threats make for a tough decision. So Naahbi, what should we do in your assessment?”

“Here is one of my concerns, Gireesh. In India, we suffer an ongoing issue which shadows our government. I am speaking of criminals who, if paid enough money, will do whatever is asked of them. Twenty percent of our elected officials are corrupt. Aafre has access to unlimited capital and ways to bribe others. Over time, using his influence and money, he can gain control of India if he wishes.”

“Naahbi, corruption is always a concern. Put this issue aside for a moment. We expect the leaders of the Rajya Sabha and Lok Sabha to be here any minute. I would like you to tell them about today's developments. I wish to witness their reactions. This will give me an idea of what direction they are leaning. You realize Naahbi, even though we cannot prove it, they assassinated several influential individuals in Russia, China and the United States. I believe Cain orchestrated the assassination of the members of America's Congress and Senate, along with their Supreme Court. If we choose to inform them no, I will not stop looking over my shoulder.”

“I share these concerns with you.”

The door opened as their security agent entered.

“The Speaker of Lok Sabha, Ballabh Shah and Leader of the Rajya Sabha, Kamalapati Singh, are here to meet with you.”

Gireesh and Naahbi welcomed their guests as they took seats on the couch opposite them. Ballabh seemed anxious and quickly started asking questions.

“Could you tell me why the hurry, Gireesh? Your message stated whatever you brought us here for is urgent.”

“What happened today is urgent, Mr. Speaker. Prime Minister Naahbi will tell you about our meeting today with Cain and his axe man, Aafre. These immensely powerful men intend to take over India. Today's session was disturbing.”

Naahbi did a summary of their meeting. Once finished, he asked the two leaders of Parliament for their opinions.

“What direction do you think our government should take?”

“If they economically pressure us,” Kamalapati said, “the people will vote each of us out. Elections are next year. However, I dislike joining a World Order, like the failed United Nations.”

“What do you think, Ballabh?” Gireesh asked.

“I agree with my colleagues' assessment. However, I concur we are extremely close to an economic disaster. Without them, we may be removed by force. You haven’t given us your opinion, Gireesh.

“Ballabh, they indicated we could keep our government powers and positions we presently enjoy. However, we assume they will dictate what we will and will not do. Our military is what they want and our nuclear arsenal.”

“For what Gireesh? There is enough fire power among themselves to wipe out the entire world.”

“Cain continues, saying we are soon to be invaded by aliens connected to Elijah and Enoch. Their coalition obviously needs our military support to fight against them.”

“What are they talking about, Gireesh? Star Wars? Fiction is what their alien paranoia sounds like to me.”

Kamalapati continued speaking about his frustration about extraterrestrial beings and such absurdity. Gireesh addressed his concerns.

“Cain acknowledged the same statements in his State of the Union Address before they killed everyone. Maybe they're right about those beings from another planet. You must admit, since these Witnesses appeared, everything in the world has gone wrong. Something unusual is occurring.”

“Gireesh, how much time do we have to give them a decision?” Ballabh asked.

“We told them it would take a day and a half.”

“Gireesh, why not vote among us? We can see where we stand,” Naahbi suggested. “I choose to join them. If we fail to, they will annihilate us, and we will forfeit our positions. I believe by uniting with them, we can never be voted out of power. The four of us together will rule India. All 1.3 billion of them.”

The room grew quiet. Gireesh is aware they each aspired to maintain their authority and position. By agreeing to this, he would become a dictator with total control over their country. He had an idea that may work for now.

“We, the four of us, will share the dominion of ruling India together. If other governmental politicians balk, we can discuss with Aafre a plan to diffuse their concerns.”

Their vote was unanimous.

### Chapter 48

##### Planetary Defense Coordination Office, NASA HQ

##### Washington DC

##### Comet

T

om is looking over his daily scans of the solar system from various telescopes from around the world not destroyed by fragments of the asteroid, when he saw it.

“Oh my, Linda,” Tom said from across the room. “Here comes another one. This one is bigger.”

Linda ran over to Tom's work area as he pointed out a new, unknown blip moving toward Earth’s orbit.

“Linda, this one appeared out of thin air. I really mean, without warning. This NEO is simply here. There is no past tracking, no detection, no alert.”

“How big is this one?”

“May be a mile across or less. This one follows a similar course to Noelani, just twice the size. Take note, Linda, this NEO is not an asteroid, it has a tail. This Neo is an unnamed, uncharted Comet.”

“I am going to let Dr. Schmidt know we have another one. We need to gather as much data as possible. The big shots will want information sooner than later. I believe when Alice hears this, she will freak out.”

### Chapter 49

##### Teddy Stadium

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Preparation for a Miracle

A

t the largest stadium in Israel, Elijah and Enoch were preparing for a unique sermon. One that would bring back stories from the ancient past of Israel. “Enoch, the seats are filling up fast,” Elijah commented.

“Looks like a Billy Graham Crusade. When he came to town, everyone got saved.”

“I am not Billy Graham. I will, motivate these people to accept Christ tonight. Their interest in learning the tale of Jesus is the reason they are attending. They hunger to learn more about Jesus' account. I just know it.”

“How many are we expecting tonight?”

“The stadium holds around 32,000. We placed 4,000 chairs on the field. So, a full house is 36,000 people.”

Jeff Leibowitz, the event coordinator at the stadium, came over to Enoch and Elijah. He was excited.

“The stadium entrances have long lines. I believe this will be a full house. The temporary field seats filled up first. Makes one think Elijah, people aspire to be near you.”

“They hunger to hear the words of Christ within their hearts, Jeff. Israel is changing.”

“You may be right. To make you aware, I am handling your other venues, too. Sammy Offer Stadium is tomorrow night. And two others afterwards. It appears your calendar is challenging. You are a better man than me.”

“Did Mr. Armstrong get the payments to you?” Enoch inquired.

“Yes, he did. We are good to go. He paid us for all four events.”

“Great. Just checking. I assume Reverend Marks has everything under control?”

“Yes, he is efficient. The tough part Minister Marks faced was finding choirs from Israel, who sing Christian music,” Jeff said with a wink. “The event starts at 7:30. Elijah, you are on at 8.”

### Chapter 50

##### THE Network, Brad Williams Reporting

##### Chicago, IL

##### The Tenth Nation

T

he hidden announcer introduced the evening show as Brad began speaking. “Good evening, America, and the world. I am Brad Williams, Anchor of THE Network News, broadcasting from our Chicago studios, accompanied by my co-anchors Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan.”

“Our first news item we are reporting on, deals with the meetings held in New Delhi with several global leaders. We understand, India has decided to join the new Coalition of Nations in Babylon. The addition of India brings the Alliance to ten member nations. This alliance replaces the United Nations. These Ten Nations commit to exchange assets, technology, and create a One World Government, like the European Common Market. The initiative of the Ten is to eliminate war, poverty, and hunger.”

“We will share our interview taped earlier with the business magnate, Aafre Waldger, conducted by video phone, by our own Nancy Arms.”

The camera zoomed in on Nancy.

“Thank you, Brad. Aafre Waldger is the world’s richest man. He is an industrialist, philanthropist, and a person of vast knowledge of world markets. We sat down together today, as Aafre began by describing the newly established alliance of ten nations. Here is our interview.”

Their monitor showed Aafre sitting at his desk, broadcasting from New Babylon, Iraq. They split the screen between Nancy and him.

“Aafre, what is the purpose of the Ten Nation Coalition?”

“This project has been in the works since the end of World War II. Our purpose since then has been to end war, hunger, equal distribution of world resources and share a common goal of understanding. Each of us is the same. For an extended period, the United Nations tried to achieve these goals. The UN became a toothless organization, which did nothing other than supply a platform to hear other countries' complaints. The way the UN was set up, a select few members had veto power for initiatives. China, France, United Kingdom, United States and Russia. These rules ensured no progress would be made, resulting in no achievements being accomplished, which would improve Earth's challenges for its people.”

“The citizens of our world couldn't rely on the United Nations. No common goals with little cooperation between them. Add to this, the group consisted of 193 countries, each with their own agenda. The organization was useless as its forerunner, the League of Nations, post-World War I. Like its predecessor, the United Nations failed. Under this bilateral new agreement, the Ten will share Spheres of Government. 183 nations will be divided regionally, under the Ten. The concept is like a pyramid.”

“These Ten countries control 80 percent of the world’s economy. The other 173 countries will be placed under the leadership of the ones just named.”

“What of France?”

“France will join the United States of Europe.

“Do they agree with this?”

“We are still negotiating with them.”

“What is your first order of business?”

“Our main focus we are working on is to stabilize areas devastated or in turmoil, owing to devastation directly caused by the aliens, Enoch, and Elijah. The hurricanes, volcanoes, and an asteroid have left a large part of the Earth’s countries in a state of emergency. The United States has faced significant damage to resources, infrastructure, and loss of life by the two alien terrorists. Italy's primary cities were demolished. France, Spain, China, the list goes on, sustained considerable damage. The Vatican is devastated, as is Rome. The ruins in Rome are not recognizable. We need to get support to them as soon as humanly possible.”

“This assistance will come from the Ten?”

“Yes Nancy. The Ten are pooling resources to get necessary aid to the affected areas, as we speak.”

“Does the Ten plan to elect a leader sometime soon?”

“Yes Nancy, we are. We are planning to designate a chief from our own ranks. The leading candidate is Cain. He alone put this coalition together. He was the main individual who coordinated assistance from several countries and corporations, to provide aid and support to areas affected by the atrocities caused by Enoch and Elijah. However, his assuming this position is not cast in stone.”

“Today, Aafre, NASA stated a comet may be streaking toward Earth.”

“Yes, we are aware of this. This one is called Wormwood, per their Bible scriptures. This disaster is another of Enoch's and Elijah’s attempts to destroy our world. We are trying to pressure Israel to arrest and detain these men. However, Israel believes they are Prophets from their God and will not cooperate.”

“If we assume Aafre that Enoch is correct, when this comet does impact Earth, and poisons the water supply, what are your plans?”

“Ten days ago, worldwide, we notified bottlers of soft drinks, beer and other industries that can bottle water. This new alien attack may cause a shortage of drinking water in certain parts of the world. We can store and distribute enough canned or bottled water to give each person three containers a day, or thirty-six ounces of drinking water.”

“How is the canned water going to be distributed?”

“Distribution of the cans will be done by local governments. The Ten is in charge of ensuring the transportation and delivery to distribution points.”

“You keep referring to an alien attack. Cain also said he was releasing the UFO files from the government. Can you tell us anything else, or maybe your personal concerns about this matter?”

“We have known for a remarkably prolonged span of time, UFOs are real. They are assembled using a technology we cannot develop at this time. However, we captured one of their aircraft a few years back. We are reverse engineering it as we speak. Many are of the opinion, Elijah and Enoch are from this alien race, disguised as Christianity. Their intent is to colonize or enslave the world. The Watchers or destroyers did so centuries ago. The Sumerians left us the history of these beings, written literally in stone. I am referring to the Sumerian stone tablets.”

“Aafre, many believe Jesus is coming.”

“Nancy, Jesus is dead. The ones approaching from space disguised as Christians were here before. They seek gold, silver, and other riches from us. Using force, their intent is to take what they want and destroy anyone or anything, wanting to stop them. The realization people need to understand is if a person, a God, the followers of Jesus, an army of Angels, or anything else comes from above, they are aliens!”

Aafre shifted in his seat as he continued speaking.

“Let me add this. As for god… he lives among us. He has, with his hand, helped the world to rebuild after the recorded onslaughts of the aliens. Most know their destructive ways upon the Earth. The Flood, The Tower, Sodom and Gomorrah, and many other times. He will be unveiled in the near future.”

“Have you met him?”

“I am not totally sure. He has never been unveiled to me.

“The Ten are currently in charge of the world. Is this correct?”

“Yes, with the cooperation of member nations. At present, the Ten Nations are independent, sovereign countries. These nations agreed in principle to work together to resolve issues we face.”

“Any governments opposing you?”

“Yes, there are a few. We do not consider them an issue. Eventually, they will understand the world needs leadership. These alien terrorists are making a mess of our world.”

“Can’t you go to Israel and arrest them?”

“I covered this earlier. However, we left Israel alone for the moment. We negotiated and signed a seven-year security agreement when the great relocation of Muslims around the world occurred. Agitating Israel is not in our best interest. The Ten wish no wars to occur. By diffusing the Middle East conflict, we stopped the source of multiple disagreements. We are seeking a diplomatic solution regarding the Witnesses and Israel.”

“Since the United States is under Martial Law, Aafre, under what authority did President Cain use, allowing him to agree the United States would join the Ten?”

“You may want to approach him and ask your question directly. From what I know, the United States no longer has a functioning federal government. This exposes a vulnerability within the United States. As required by law, a military Tribunal granted him the authority to act on behalf of the country. The Martial Law interpretation of the United States Government means the military has increased authority and control over civilian life. Right now, he wields absolute power, bestowed upon him by those in positions of authority.”

“With this said, the United States has sustained the bulk of the damage caused by these Alien Witnesses, Enoch and Elijah. By joining us, Cain has ensured the United States' participation in shaping world decisions, and ensuring the United States' security. This also guarantees the United States will obtain as much aid as necessary to sustain the country. Cain made an executive decision. His actions are intended to benefit his country.”

“Many are concerned about nuclear weapons. Does the Ten now control their use or nonuse?”

“Yes, we do. We negotiated treaties, generation after generation since World War II ended. These agreements were fragile. Part of the articles we formed for the Ten Nations ensures these weapons are under the Tens' control. Once again, we are seeking peace in the world, not wars, or threats of nuclear wars.”

“What about the global worldwide currency and worldwide chipping, instead of cash or credit cards? What is the goal here?”

“Criminals and their cartels have ruled certain countries using cash. The American Dollar is the culprit. The cash could be accumulated, hidden, and not accountable. Many attempts to control this issue, from money laundering rules and tough laws, still failed to stop the offenders or cartels. The local thief who stole diamonds, cars, computers, TVs and other items relied upon being paid in cash. Untraceable currency.”

“With chipping, you can’t go to the corner and buy a bag of dope. There is no cash. A fence cannot sell illegally gained goods, there is no untraceable cash to do so. And… assuming they broke the law, and fenced stolen property, they would need to apply for a merchant account to collect payment to swipe a chip. This won't happen. Companies using chip scanners are government approved. If you are not on the list, you cannot have a scanner or merchant account. Criminals always relied on stealing or receiving cash. When physical currency is no longer available, most crime will end forever.”

“Thank you Aafre. Your being candid has helped us understand the world's circumstances.”

“You’re welcome, Nancy.”

The cameras focused back on Brad and Nancy.

“Nancy, Aafre’s comments are a lot to digest.”

“Yes, they are Brad. Considering the world’s situation, I believe the creation of the Ten makes absolute sense.”

“I agree with you. Most believe the formation of the Ten is a masterful move by the world’s governments. Let's proceed to other news.”

Their camera zoomed in on Brad.

“One of our correspondents is reporting from what was Rome. She is clothed with protective clothing and a breathing device. Using a drone, we have video footage of the extensive damage caused by Noelani to the Vatican and central Rome.”

Brad and Nancy turned toward the monitor.

“Debbie.”

“Thank you, Brad. Debbie Cochran, reporting from what was the Vatican City. I am standing where St. Peter’s Square used to be. As you can see behind me, St. Peter’s Basilica is nothing but rubble. The Vatican buildings are either leveled or seriously damaged. Porta Pertusa, The Leonine Wall gate built in the 14th and 15th century which overlooked the Vatican's Torre San Giovanni, was leveled. The Sistine Chapel, of the Vatican Museums, best known for Michelangelo's 16th-century painted ceiling, was disassembled, and shipped to Babylon, prior to impact.”

“The Palazzo San Carlo is gone forever. There is nothing left. Only ruins and human remains are left from this once stunning place. Brad, as you can see from the aerial recording, the home of Catholicism has been destroyed. There is nothing remaining. We have footage of Rome’s ancient ruins, the Forum and Colosseum, which evoked the power of the former Roman Empire. Everywhere you look is nothing but rubble. The city’s fountains no longer exist. Ancient Roman buildings and artifacts are lost forever.”

“Debbie, are there rescue efforts underway and what are officials saying at this time?”

“We understand Brad, the Church itself is combing through the rubble. Many Priests are presumed dead, and part of the Swiss Guard is missing. Peter the 2nd issued a declaration through Cardinal Richital. He said, efforts of the Church are worldwide, working together to salvage not only the city, but to help surviving church workers. As far as the City of Rome’s government, they have released no statement.”

“Is there a death count yet?”

“There were 3 million people living in Rome, including the Vatican. Based on limited information, deaths are running close to 1.5 million people dead or injured.”

“What about the coastal areas, Debbie?”

“Italy, France, Spain, and other countries bordering the Mediterranean Sea are dealing with rotting fish on their shores. The Asteroid has killed millions of marine creatures as they are washing up on coastlines, causing health issues. Even in Rome, you can detect the odor of decomposing fish in the air. Also, commercial boats and personal crafts, from fishing boats to yachts, are either sunk or destroyed. Because of the amount of destruction, rescues in the Mediterranean are not occurring.”

“Thanks Debbie. We will get back to you soon.”

“This is Debbie Cochran, reporting from Rome.”

Brad turned towards the anchor desk again from the monitor.

“We have another exciting announcement to share. With excitement, we announce the move of our headquarters and studios to Babylon, a city known for its cultural significance and innovation. Our move is for two reasons. Despite our move from New York to Chicago, our concerns about the Witnesses destroying Chicago persist. In order to provide you with the news you've come to expect from THE Network, we must relocate once more. Another reason is that New Babylon aims to become the main hub for news and information.”

“There is exciting information for science buffs. Satellites destroyed by the fragments of the asteroid are being rebuilt as quickly as possible. Two GPS satellites are scheduled to launch within ninety days. We will be right back.”

### Chapter 51

##### Teddy Stadium

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Eating Out

J

ohn was in a makeshift dressing room, applying the final changes to his makeup. Tonight, Eden II will be broadcasting live from Teddy Stadium, the first of four broadcasts featuring Elijah and Enoch, preaching to Israel. They look to share the good news of Jesus’, for Jews considering converting to Christianity. The program was being sponsored by ‘the Jews for Jesus’ Organization. He looked in the mirror, satisfied. John stood and made his way to the press box. Once he arrived, he found his co-anchors already seated at the anchor desk. This is their first live broadcast together since the Memorial Park sermon. Enoch felt it necessary to do this event as it happens. Many were concerned about their security by leaving Eden II. Enoch assured the safety of the team. The Ten considered all of them, including Elijah and Enoch, as terrorists. The outstanding international warrants for their arrest remained in place. Enil came up and faced the broadcasting desk.

“John, sit down. We're taking over the world's networks in three minutes.”

John said hello to Mary Ann and Geraldo, then sat in his anchor chair as Enil handed him a script.

“Counting down John.”

Geraldo leaned over, whispering.

“It was nice to eat out for dinner in a restaurant instead of Eden II. Do not get me wrong, I like our home and the food. However, I am certain you will concur. Getting out into the world was a welcome change.”

“Yes, it was. On the other hand, we will be back there soon after our broadcast. The Israeli government cannot guarantee our safety once the entire globe knows we are here. I agree with you though, it was nice to eat out. It's been years since we last visited a restaurant.”

The countdown clock hit zero; the announcer began.

“People of the world, welcome to Eden II News, live with John Roddenburg from Teddy Stadium in Jerusalem, Israel. Tonight, we are covering the first sermon of Elijah and Enoch, directed at the citizens of Israel. Here is your host, John Roddenburg.”

“Good evening world. Tonight, Elijah and Enoch, God’s Witnesses, from Teddy Stadium are going to share the news of Yeshua. The venue this evening is being held in Israel’s largest stadium. Many of you remember, we broadcast the first sermon of Enoch from Kansas City a few years ago. As you can see from our monitors like then, Teddy Stadium is at full capacity. They added chairs on the stadium floor, and the audience filled every seat. A large number of people arrived yesterday, camping out to get the best seats. Elijah is scheduled to take the podium within 30 minutes. While we wait, we are going to bring you up to date on today’s news.”

“Our first breaking news story is we learned India has joined the now Ten Member Nation Alliance in Babylon. Mary Ann has the story.”

“Thank you, John. Bible prophecy speaks of the Ten-Nation-Alliance in Daniel 7. Daniel referred to those ten horns in his dream, represented by ten kings, who will appear out of the fourth kingdom. This fourth kingdom represents the Ten. An eleventh king rises to power, who differs from the others, replacing three of the earlier kings. This king’s boasting turns to blasphemy. We believe this represents the future leader of the Alliance. I will read the verse to you.”

‘It’s ten horns are ten kings who will rule that empire. Then another king will arise, different from the other ten, who will subdue three of them.’

“This leader not only speaks against God, but he oppresses the saints and the two Witnesses, Elijah and Enoch. He intends to change time and laws. His actions are to make him appear to the masses as if he is God. In other words, the new head of the Alliance will think he can stop God from His timeline and defeat Jesus in battle. He surpasses those before him by speaking boastfully, then blaspheming. Finally looking to challenge God's order at the conflict of Armageddon, which will take place less than four years from now.”

“Aafre Waldger today told THE Network anchors, Jesus is dead,” John stated. “Does his statement possibly refer to a ‘ruler blaspheming’?”

“Yes, it does John. These statements are only the beginning of his boastfulness. Scripture tells us, this figure will declare himself God, and all the world will wonder after him.”

“Mary Ann, who is this individual?” Geraldo asked.

“Most likely Cain. My gut feeling is he is the son of Lucifer or Satan. Aafre stated in his Network interview, Cain was the frontrunner to head the Alliance. Therefore, him being elected leader makes sense.”

“How can one avoid the Antichrist's influence?” John asked.

“First off, refuse ‘The Mark’. We believe 'The 'Symbol' of the Beast', or 666, is the chip implanted in people. By agreeing to take it, you seal your fate with Satan and are doomed to everlasting separation from God.”

“Numerous individuals will find refusing 'The Mark' challenging,” Geraldo added. “By refusing 'The Symbol', Nancy means you cannot acquire food, employment, or medical aid.”

“This is true Geraldo. Enoch informed us that a black market is expected to emerge worldwide for people facing this situation. Those who have faith need to seek out these underground economies and networks to survive. We are planning in the immediate future to share ways to avoid taking ‘The Mark of the Beast’. As the announcement of the Antichrist approaches, we will broadcast more details.”

“We are ready to get started, Mary Ann and Geraldo,” John stated. “Our event coordinators gave us a two-minute warning. Please note, Elijah's portion of the sermon is in Hebrew. Subtitles in 64 languages are going to be available for the entire sermon. Enoch and Reverend Marks are scheduled to speak in English. The choir is about finished. Minister Marks will take the podium and lead us in prayer. Let’s listen.”

Eden II technicians switched over to the podium cameras and stage area, beginning Elijah’s live broadcast.

### Chapter 52

##### Main Conference Room, Nebuchadnezzar Tower

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Black Ops Plan

A

fter watching the pre-show special from Israel, Cain, in his mind began formulating a plan. A great opportunity lies ahead. He laid his strategy out to them. “Jamal, I realize we cannot do anything to Elijah or Enoch now. However, their friends are in Israel. John Roddenburg, his staff, Reverend Marks, and others are out in the open instead of their sanctuary. Is it possible for us to capture or assassinate any of them?”

“We have the ability to try. I had a hunch they might broadcast live from Israel.”

“Jamal, they are like sitting ducks!” Cain said as his excitement of the prospect of a last-minute covert operation had him beaming. “What actions are we capable of taking?

“I am thinking, Cain, give me a second.”

Recognizing this as an opening, Jamal believed it was the perfect moment to strike back at Eden II. Looking back at Cain, a thought came to his mind.

We have a limited time frame of three hours to take action. At the moment, there is an American Seal Team near a military base just outside the border of Israel. They can be dispatched and reach Israel within a short span of time. After locating the broadcasting booth, their next course of action would involve attempting to either capture or assassinate them.

“Jamal, I like your initiative. Opportunity knocks!”

### Chapter 53

##### Meyer Brandlin’s Office

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Subterfuge

M

eyer from his office watched Elijah’s sermon from his flat screen TV. The program had started their live coverage of the event as his door opened. An IDF private entered.

“Director Branlin.”

“Yes, what is it?”

“We have received new intelligence, which leads us to believe there may be an attempt to capture or kill John Roddenburg and his associates. We intercepted a mysterious communication from Babylon from an agent you had embedded there. It says to dispatch at once, operation ‘Kill II,’ in roman numerals. We assume they are describing Israel. Iran has used this code ‘Kill’ to extract or assassinate persons in the Mideast in the past. We think the II, stumbling upon the encrypted message we intercepted, means Eden II. High-profile people from Eden II are here tonight. We believe they are the targets. The personnel involved are from Babylon. They are most likely an American Seal Team based near our border.”

“And…”

“Immediately after we intercepted the message, a private jet left Rutuba from an alliance base. The jet is owned by a Saudi, Prince. Their manifest states, they are flying to Cairo, Egypt, on a supposedly diplomatic mission. However, he is nowhere near Iraq. He is here tonight at the sermon, as a guest of our Prime Minister, David Ben Bernstein.”

“Where is the jet right now?”

“Their jet is traveling southeast toward our border. We calculated the flight time to be one hour and fifteen minutes.

“Are we aware of any request to land in Jerusalem?”

“No Sir. They most likely will attempt to parachute near or somewhere around Teddy Stadium.”

“We are in need of a game plan, Private. Our priority is to increase security for our guests at the stadium. Since we assume they may enter our country by skydiving. We can either intercept them or at least track them as they make their way to the arena. There are many people outside the sports complex watching the sermon on jumbotrons. Their extraction team will blend into the masses. Time wise, they need to touch down within 10-15 minutes of the stadium. Of course, they could land farther away, steal a vehicle, and still make it there before the sermon ends.”

The wheels were turning in Meyers' head. His thoughts were considering how he would plan the extraction if it were his operation. Thinking quickly he addressed his aide.

“Contact our security chief in the stadium's broadcast booth and brief him. Then contact Captain John Bernstein, tell him to scramble jets to intercept their flight. Also, instruct him, we may have jumpers. Shoot to kill is the order.”

“Yes Sir, I will deal with it immediately.”

### Chapter 54

##### Iraq Airspace

##### Plans

T

he Seal team assigned to the operation KILL II, by Babylon, were flying the stolen, gutted out private jet, registered to the Royal Family of Saudi Arabia. Prior to takeoff, it took them 15 minutes to fuel and gut the cabin. They threw out chairs, tables, bar, galley and everything else unnecessary for the operation. They needed their entire team for this to work. Like sardines, the team was squeezed into the aircraft with their equipment. Their fictitious flight plan had the jet heading toward Cairo on a diplomatic mission. The passenger manifest included diplomats from the Royal Family. They were 45 minutes away from their jump. This tight timeline gave them little time to prepare for the objective. Lt. Stankus asked Master Chief Petty Officer Williams to hand him the images of their objectives.

Stankus removed the photos from the package and looked at them. The photos had numbers on them. He addressed his command.

“Here are our targets. We have numbered our targets as primary and secondary. They desire the capture of one or possibly two individuals alive.”

Stankus showed his crew the pictures, one at a time.

“The first is John Roddenburg, the second is Reverend Marks, the third and fourth, are co-anchors Geraldo and Nancy. You each will receive a copy of the pictures. Our plan is to storm the broadcast booth at the stadium and extract them. If we cannot get Roddenburg and company out of the stadium, we are to kill them. However, using the crowd as cover, we should be able to accomplish our mission. We will escape through the Arab Quarter, where they will provide transportation for us to exit Israel through what was Palestine. There are several tunnels we can use. I have coordinates for a safe house … memorize them.”

Stankus gave each a set of pictures with the protected residence coordinates. They had to commit to memory the coordinates, then destroy the originals. The flight deck cabin door opened, as their pilot startled them with an update of a serious issue.

“The Israel Defense Forces have contacted us. We are to land our jet at a military base in Jerusalem. Fighter jets will arrive to escort us within a few minutes. We cannot outrun them. However, you are still able to jump at your coordinates. They are likely to shoot at us for failure to follow their escort. Me and my co-pilot will jump with you. I will put the jet on a full throttle vertical climb or a zoom climb, just before we jump. This will cause the plane to stall. At that point, the IDF can shoot the jet out of the air or let it crash.”

Great, Stankus thought, ‘jumping out with a fighter escort shooting at us. Casualties before we hit the ground.’

“We know how to avoid being shot,” Stankus said. “We are planning to descend to the lowest altitude we can. This should give us added speed and confuse fighters attempting to shoot. With the night sky, their pilots might have difficulty seeing us with our chutes closed. Do not pull before 700 feet. You and your co-pilot need to accompany us when you hit the ground. We can use the two of you for our mission.”

“Aye, Sir,” he said, as he returned to the cockpit. Stankus turned back to his men.

“Let’s go over our plan again. We only get one shot.”

### Chapter 55

##### Teddy Stadium, Broadcast Booth

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Security Concerns

T

he choir wrapped up the pre-sermon performance. The opening prayer would be followed by Elijah's religious lecture. John noticed Enil trying to get his attention. He motioned with his arm and hand, indicating John needed to come to him. As the video feed focused on the stage and podium, John left the anchor desk.

“What’s the urgency?”

“John, Meyer Branlin of Mossad is on the phone. He says the issue is urgent.”

John walked over to the receiver and spoke into it.

“John Roddenburg here.”

“Hello John. Meyer Branlin Director of Mossad. I have an urgent issue involving you and your companions. We received a reliable tip that an American Seal Team has been dispatched to extract you and your crew from the stadium in Babylon. We intercepted an encrypted message from Iraq. I am sending a group of agents and IDF soldiers to the broadcast booth as a precaution.”

“Do you have any idea of their timetable?”

“Probably at the end of the sermon. People exiting the stadium will be a diversion for them.”

“Can we complete the telecast?”

“For now, yes. However, based on my assessment, be prepared to leave. I am committed to stopping the broadcast to protect you and your associates.”

“Meyer, could you give me an estimate on when we can expect your team to arrive?”

“Around ten minutes.”

“I shall keep an eye out for them.”

“Keep this line open. I may need to call you back.”

“I am going to inform Enil of the situation. He will answer the phone and come get me if necessary.”

Once Meyer hung up, John put the receiver in the cradle and walked over to Enil to apprise him of the situation. After hearing the issues, Enil gave John instructions.

“I intend to order the transports. There won't be any summary tonight. You and your crew are going to leave right after the sermon. They do not know who I am. I can stay here and shut everything down after you leave. I suggest we do not tell your co-anchors what Meyer told you.”

“Sounds like a plan. Should we notify Enoch?”

“I will after the sermon. For now, we can handle this. Mossad is coming and they are efficient at subterfuge. With Meyer’s agents arriving, there’s a certain amount of protection. Return to the anchor desk and act normal.”

John nodded an okay as he walked back to his seat and sat down. Mary Ann and Geraldo stared at him with uncertainty.

“John, is there an issue?” Mary Ann asked, noticing he had a strange expression on his face. “You look concerned about something.”

“Technical stuff from Eden II. They want me to handle it after the sermon.”

### Chapter 56

##### Elijah’s First Sermon, Teddy Stadium

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### The Sacrifice

T

he pre-ceremonies finished, as Marks took to the podium. In English, he spoke to the masses. “Let us pray.”

Marks bowed his head, then lifted his hands toward Heaven as he began his prayer.

“Adonai, Father of Israel, hear our prayer. Thank you for your Son Jesus, who surrendered His life willingly as the sacrificial lamb for humanity. Thank you, Yeshua, for being our Savior. You defeated sin and death and the grave. You put your adversary Satan under Your feet. You are returning soon to bring Your kingdom to Earth. Holy Spirit open the hearts of men and women and fulfill the prophecy to the people of Israel. Inspire those who spread the gospel worldwide. This group of yours comprising 144,000, will teach and save souls from the Antichrist. They will counsel the world. They are going to help people to live and refuse to accept 'The Mark of the Beast.' Father let Your Presence be throughout all of Israel tonight. In Jesus’ name we pray, Amen.”

Amens resonated inside the stadium and outside.

“Tonight, our speakers are the Prophets Elijah and Enoch; Gods Last Two Witnesses. Please let me introduce them.”

Enoch and Elijah walked onto the stage as they bowed to the audience. In Hebrew they said, ‘Erov Tov’, then pronounced it in English, ‘Good evening’. Elijah walked to the podium as he began his sermon, which is both a warning and a plea to Israel.

“In the days of Baal, Ahab, the King, and the Prophets of Baal did not believe in the Lord. Each of you should recognize the story as I… I, Elijah the Prophet, was there. When God sent Prophets to Israel, they denied their words. They believed in the magic and lies of false gods and teachers. The situation in Israel was troublesome. It had not rained in years, because of Israel’s sins.”

“During the Roman occupation, as in Baal, Israel denied Jesus as the Messiah. The leaders of the Jews feared losing their power and crucified Jesus, using the Romans as His executioner. However, on the third day, Yeshua rose from the dead. He defeated sin, death, Satan and evil. Nevertheless, Israel could not see through the veil covering their eyes for 2,000 years. Just like in the days of Baal.”

“Many remember when God spoke from the Heavens and destroyed the evil, Chief Rabbi of the Sephardi, Benjamin Hagan. As you all witnessed on television worldwide, he simply evaporated. Hagans' dilemma is as that of the rich man in the book of John. This parable describes when the affluent man saw Abraham with Lazarus from Hades. Here is how John recorded the conversation in the New Testament.”

Elijah lifted his Bible off the podium and read the story.

“So, he cried out, Father Abraham, have mercy on me and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue. For I am in agony in this fire.”

“But Abraham answered, Child, remember that during your lifetime you received your good things, while Lazarus received terrible things. But now he is comforted here, while you are left to suffer. And besides all this, a great chasm has been fixed between us and you, so that even those who wish cannot cross from here to you, nor can anyone cross from there to us.”

“Then I beg you, father, he said, send Lazarus to my father’s house, for I have five brothers. Let him warn them so they will not also end up in this place of torment.”

“But Abraham replied, they have Moses and the Prophets; let your brothers listen to them.”

“No, Father Abraham, he said, but if someone is sent to them from the dead, they will repent.”

“Then Abraham said to him, if they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be persuaded even if someone rises from the dead.”

Elijah placed his Bible back on the podium as he addressed the crowd.

“It is now time that Israel acknowledges Jesus as the Messiah. Understand in your hearts, He rose from the dead. He is sitting at the right hand of God the Father. He is going to return, and His kingdom will be for eternity.”

Elijah slowly moved his body in a full circle, looking at the people. Elijah wished for all eyes to witness his face. He shouted at them!

“If you do not do as I say, and in your heart recognize and accept the truth … each of you as the Rich Man… will thirst for eternity. Tonight, for those who doubt what I am saying, we will here today recreate the scene in Baal.”

Elijah motioned to Enoch as they walked down off the stage, to where twelve large stones were.

“Take the twelve stones, Enoch, with the help of others and shape them on the platform into an altar.”

Enoch, using several spectators, started moving the heavy stones onto the center of the stage, creating an altar. Elijah spoke to the people.

“Tonight, you will see God's power come from the Heavens. Teddy Stadium is an open-air venue. They constructed the podium floor I am standing on with wood. We are setting up this altar, upon a wooden stage. Those who remember the story know we'll be safe. Retain what you just heard from me. Keep my words in your minds as we move forward.”

“We had the Levites prepare a bull, according to ancient sacrifice customs. We brought cedar wood to place inside the altar. As I did in Baal, we will saturate the altar with gallons and gallons of water over the wood, the altar, and the bull for sacrifice.”

The Levites came with the cedar wood and the cut-up bull, carrying the cut pieces on silver platters. They gathered around the altar of 12 large stones and placed the wood inside the altar. Once they finished stacking the logs on the altar, they placed the cut-up pieces of the bull on top of the logs, six feet high. When the Levites finished, Elijah spoke to the people.

“These 12 Stones represent the 12 Tribes of Israel. We will soak the cedar wood with water. I'm going to let the water and blood of the sacrifice completely cover and run off the stage.”

“As in the days of Baal, they soaked the sacrifice with water. The soaked wood of the sacrifice could not be lit by any man. You should remember, the idolatry priests tried to do so. They prayed hours upon hours to their idols as I laughed at them.”

The next group of Levites appeared, carrying large vessels of water upon their heads. 144 of them.

“Each of these 144 Levites are carrying 5-gallon vessels of water. These stand for 12 vessels each, representing the 12 Tribes of Israel.”

They each poured water into the center of the altar. The blood from the fresh cut bull caused the water to turn to a reddish color as it began to drip off the platform. Once they finished with their task, the Levites left the stage. As they did, Elijah began his explanations and plea.

“Some remain unconvinced of Jesus Christ's messiahship. You will tonight. However, prior to progressing with the sacrifice, are there any of you attending here who believe you can light this sacrifice to the Lord God Almighty and prove me wrong? If so, please step forward.”

After Elijah said this, to his surprise, 12 Orthodox Jewish men came forward. Each was wearing a Tefillin, black leather boxes holding Hebrew parchment scrolls. The set includes two boxes. One box for their head and one for their arm. Each consists of three principal components. The scrolls, the box, and the strap. Their leader took a microphone as he approached Elijah, shouting!

“Elijah, we refuse to accept your Jesus as the Messiah! Others have appointed one Orthodox Jew from each tribe to prove you are wrong. We learned of your plans for the sacrifice tonight. As a group, we prayed for two days without stopping. We have knowledge that Yahweh intends to tell the people of Israel, Jesus is not the Messiah. We wish to light the fire ourselves from the Heavens.”

Elijah bowed toward the 12 and pointed to the soaked altar.

“Be my guest.”

The stadium became eerily quiet. These 12 Orthodox Jews had everyone’s attention as they proceeded to the altar, then circled the sacrifice. They began chanting ancient prayers, lit incense, and walked waving the clouds of smoke around the altar. The 12 bowed several times. The one who had spoken to Elijah threw his smoking thurible onto the altar as the others followed.

The smoke was there, however, there was no fire, so they kept chanting and praying. After ten more minutes of chanting and circling the altar, Elijah challenged them.

“Are you ready to give up your silly charade? You realize what is going to happen next. Did you not study me in your scriptures? Are you not like those priests who blasphemed against Adonai?”

Their leader shouted back with a fuming tone.

“You are of ‘ah Satan,’ Elijah!”

Ignoring the insult, Elijah gave them a command as he walked toward the altar.

“Remain near the 12 stones, while I ask God to light it for us. Position yourself next to the sacrifice. If your faith is strong, God’s fire from Heaven will not consume you.”

In defiance, they stood in a circle around the altar of 12 Stones.

“Enoch, join me please,” Elijah asked.

Enoch walked across the stage with his staff from Moses and stood by him.

“Hand me your staff, Enoch.”

Dutifully he handed the staff to Elijah, who using both hands lifted it over his head and shouted out toward Heaven.

“To the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Israel. Prove to Your people, You are the God of the nation. I am your servant, so declare and demonstrate Your power. Enable these individuals to grasp that you are Adonai. Allow Your Spirit to enter their minds and hearts so they may accept Jesus, your son, as their Messiah. Light the fire of the sacrifice. Light the fire of evangelism; and all praise to You!”

As soon as Elijah spoke those final words, a magnificent sight unfolded before their eyes - the sky burst into a brilliant glow and a thunderous roar akin to the reverberation of a thousand chariots resonated from the Heavens. The entire stadium was filled with such intense vibration that it began to shake. When the people gazed up at the sky, their eyes were met with the sight of a luminous dot, descending leisurely towards the stadium. With each passing moment, the ball of fire descending towards the stage grew larger and brighter in appearance.

The ball of fire, spinning rapidly, came to a sudden halt just a few inches away from reaching the top of the altar. As the blazing sphere engulfed the surroundings, twelve pairs of hands emerged and reached out towards the 12 Orthodox Jews, firmly grasping them, and gradually drawing them towards the center of the spinning ball of fire. Throughout this nightmarish experience, their voices resonated in the air, filled with desperate pleas for forgiveness for the sins they had committed. After their sudden disappearance, the ball of fire descended gracefully onto the altar, unleashing its towering flames that engulfed the wood and sacrifice in a mesmerizing display.

Despite the raging fire engulfing the entire stage and even consuming the mixed blood and water that was running off the altar, Elijah and Enoch remained steadfast in their position. The fires, which were sent by God, completely engulfed the stage, resembling a raging inferno. In the midst of the flames, the figures of Enoch, Elijah, and the Reverend Marks were visible to onlookers, yet they remained perfectly still. After lingering for more than five minutes, the fire eventually extinguished itself and vanished from sight.

Elijah, along with Enoch and the Reverend Marks, stood together, unharmed by the blazing fire, and gazed in awe at the spot where their meticulously constructed stone altar had once stood, now completely consumed and reduced to nothing. In a hushed tone, Elijah spoke softly.

“Witness the immense power of Almighty Yahweh and behold with your own eyes the undeniable evidence that nothing remains. No stones, no wood and the false Prophets were taken. Despite being surrounded by God's fire, we remained unharmed, with not even a single thread of our clothing, the stage, or anything in its proximity being singed.”

Elijah gazed upon the crowds, witnessing the profound sight of numerous individuals dropping to their knees, extending their arms, and fervently waving their hands in the air while shouting.

“We firmly believe that the Lord is God, and we have full faith that Jesus is the Messiah.”

The sound of their cries filled the air as an increasing number of individuals kneeled down, beseeching Yahweh for forgiveness. With a courteous gesture, Elijah handed the staff back into the waiting grasp of Enoch and addressed the multitudes.

“Please take your seats. I need to share more with you. We provided each of you with a New Testament when you arrived. Turn to Revelation chapter 7.”

The sound of thousands of pages rustling in the crowd encouraged Elijah as he read the passage.

“And after these things I saw four Angels standing on the four corners of the Earth, holding the four winds of the Earth, that the wind should not blow on the Earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree. And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God and he cried with a loud voice to the four Angels, to whom it was given to hurt the Earth and the sea, Saying, hurt not the Earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads. And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed 144,000 of all the tribes of the children of Israel. Of the tribe of Juda were sealed, 12,000. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed, 12,000. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed 12,000. Of the tribe of Asher were sealed, 12,000. Of the tribe of Naphtali were sealed, 12,000. Of the tribe of Manasseh were sealed, 12,000. Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed, 12,000. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed 12,000. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed, 12,000. Of the tribe of Zebulun were sealed, 12,000. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed, 12,000. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed, 12,000.”

“Read the rest of the chapter. I am giving those willing to hear a command, once you accept Jesus Christ as the Messiah and the Savior, go to a Levite, and tell them you are willing to be one of the 144,000. Let me warn you; by doing so, they will persecute you during the ‘Time of Sorrows’ as you travel the world and tell the story of Jesus. Be sure in your heart you are willing to accept Jesus and share with others the good news. By joining this sealed group of God's people, you will receive eternal blessings.”

“At this time, for those making a public statement of your faith and acceptance of Jesus as Messiah, I will baptize you with water from Heaven. Now kneel, bow your heads, lift your hands toward Heaven. Once you feel the healing rain, claim you are reborn by saying, thank you Jesus for making me a new creation. I love You, Yeshua. Hallelujah! If you do not feel the rain, then your heart is not yet convinced of the truth. You will stay dry. Another of God's miracles, tonight.”

At that moment, a light rain commenced, showering the gathering with droplets. Soon, one could hear the words of Hallelujah. Elijah was able to identify the individuals who remained dry despite the rain falling all around them. The rain only affected one seat, leaving the other seat untouched. While witnessing the miracle, Elijah silently expressed his thoughts, giving praise and glory to Adonai.

Ten minutes later, the rain subsided. Elijah stood before the crowd and delivered a heartfelt address to the people.

“God's baptism has stopped. Those who were chosen by God are wet from the rain. You are now a born-again Christian Jew. For those still indecisive, look inside your heart and seek understanding. It is also time for you to leave the stadium.”

Elijah and Enoch watched as a third of the attendees started exiting the stadium. Elijah turned to Enoch.

“Preach to them the words of Jesus. Give them communion. I am tired, so I must rest.”

With the miracle of the sacrifice and baptism over, Elijah departed from the stadium.

### Chapter 57

##### Fifteen Miles From Teddy Stadium

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### The Jump

A

s planned, the pilots put the jet into a zoom climb as the Seals jumped from the cabin door. Immediately they saw, while free falling, one of the escort fighters veered in their direction. The pilot began firing tracer rounds toward them. Employing evasive maneuvers, each soldier dove, using different angles by contorting their bodies during free fall. Unlike D-Day parachuters, with their technology developed chutes, they had an advantage. Most of them made it to the ground. Two did not. The co-pilot and a Seal were killed before they could deploy their chutes. They assembled 15 miles from the sports arena complex to meet up with the team members who had stolen a commercial produce delivery truck. They piled into the back, driving in the direction of the stadium. It will not be long before they arrive.

### Chapter 58

##### Outside Teddy Stadium

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Extraction

I

n the back of the truck, the seals changed into their costumes for their extraction attempt. Their disguises made them appear as Hasidic Jews wearing white shirts, black pants, wigs with curls, fake beards, broad brimmed black hats, and long coats. The coats would conceal their firearms and grenades. Two of them had prayer shawls around their shoulders. As they exited the truck, Stankus instructed Master Chief Petty Officer Williams.

“You and Petty Officer Jenkins get close to the stage. One of our pictures is of Reverend Marks. He will not be in the press box area. Once you capture Marks, quietly take him to the truck. Restrain him and place him in the back.”

“Got it Chief. We are going to get him.”

Stankus turned toward the other five with their instructions.

“Follow my lead. We need to make our way through the crowd to the press box entrance. Once there, our game starts. I am not sure what we will be up against once we arrive, a few guards or an army. Our primary goal is to extract these people. However, if we cannot remove them, kill them.”

The Seal Team made their way through the crowds outside the stadium, watching the jumbotrons, toward the ramps leading up to the media boxes. No one paid any attention to them as they passed them by. Most were ignoring them. Hasidic Jews were not popular with the general population. Once they reached the first security checkpoint, they found it roped off. A sign said, ‘Press Only,’ in Hebrew and English. Two military personnel guarded the entrance. Looking at their uniforms showing no rank, Stankus assumed they were not IDF but Mossad. He signaled to his crew to stop their advance. He whispered to them.

“Those troops are Mossad agents. They are obviously aware we are coming. If we start making noise, we will face a small army before we get to the press boxes. The plan has changed. I'll approach a guard and ask for John Roddenburg. I'm going to pretend to be drunk. Keep a close distance behind me. Once the other soldier approaches, we must silently eliminate them using our shivs. The sound of gunfire is still too much of a risk at this point. Do you understand?”

They nodded a yes.

The others trailed after Stankus as he made his way towards the guards. He was smiling, acting as if he was a punch-drunk Hasidic Jew. He approached the soldier and spoke in Hebrew.

“I understand Eden II is broadcasting here tonight. John Roddenburg is my favorite. Any chance I can see him?”

“Sir, this area is restricted. Please turn around and return to your original location.”

“What… I cannot hear you, with all the noise from the crowd.”

Another soldier approached to assess the situation.

“What does this scum want?”

The serviceman, using his gun, waved Stankus off.

“Get out of here, you drunk. No visitors tonight.”

“What? I can’t hear you.”

Leaning closer to Stankus, the soldier shouted out the same words he had said earlier. As he did, Stankus took the knife from under his coat. With a single swift movement, he inserted the knife into his abdomen and proceeded to pull it upwards towards his rib cage. Due to the rush of blood in his throat, the soldier fell to the floor in a collapsed state, unable to utter a scream. Employing the identical method, Presley managed to take the life of the other soldier. The element of unexpectedness caught them by surprise.

“Drag them over here behind this wall,” Stankus instructed them. “Change of plans.”

They moved the lifeless soldiers away from possible curious onlookers, behind a wall. Stankus told Mike to remove their uniforms. He did as he was told. Stankus told Presley to disrobe with him. They dressed in the IDF garments as they piled their disguises over the dead, naked bodies.

“The rest of you storm the entrance to the press box. Continue firing at them and throw an occasional grenade toward the doorway. This is bound to keep them occupied. We will try to find another door. Hopefully, with these uniforms, they'll allow us through. Our goal is to find, then extract Roddenburg and his friends.”

After picking up the Uzis of the fallen soldiers, Presley and Stankus began their journey down the hallway. Upon reaching the main entrance of the press box, they observed an additional door located further ahead. Positioned on either side of the door, they patiently waited for the rest of their team to detonate the main double door and gain entry. With his eyes fixed on the scene, he observed as his men forcefully stormed the main door, utilizing a grenade to blast it open. As he and Presley entered through the side door, they noticed the enemy had retreated to the open door to shoot. Roddenburg and his co-anchors were seen leaving the anchor desk, with their eyes fixed on an IDF Soldier. With a subtle gesture, he motioned for Presley to come along with him. When they reached a corner, Presley managed to swiftly catch hold of Geraldo, who happened to be the one at the very end of the line. With a threatening gesture, he placed a knife against his throat and delivered a hushed demand for complete silence or risk a fatal outcome. Geraldo ceased his efforts to break free.

“Take him to the truck, Presley. I will attempt to acquire either the woman or Roddenburg.”

Using his firearm, Presley struck Geraldo forcefully on the back of his head. As he slumped, Presley lifted him over his shoulder and left out the side door. The relentless firing of bullets persisted at the main entrance, creating a chaotic and dangerous atmosphere. Seeing that the distraction was effective, Stankus couldn't help but feel pleased.

Stankus began his search for both Roddenburg and Nancy. Despite his efforts, he was unable to locate them. They had already left. Stankus proceeded further down the hallway, his steps filled with caution, until he finally reached yet another door, which he opened slowly and carefully. Beyond the door, there was nothing but a steep set of stairs that awaited anyone who dared to venture further. With determination, he embarked on his journey down the steps. Following his second step, a hail of Uzis was unleashed, coming rapidly towards him. The sequence of shots began with his chest being hit and culminated in a shot to the head. He had completed the task and was finished.

### Chapter 59

##### Teddy Stadium, Broadcast Booth

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### The Assault

T

rue to his word, Meyer arrived with his elite to guard the broadcast booth. They wore IDF uniforms. Each carried an Uzi and a firearm, strapped to their side. They had stun grenades and ammunition clips on their utility belts. He placed his Mossad agents in strategic positions at the checkpoint and inside the broadcasting studio.

Meanwhile, as the sermon was coming to a close, the atmosphere in the room was filled with anticipation. Following Enoch's concluding prayer, both he and Reverend Marks proceeded to bless the attendees before commencing the distribution of communion. New converts were given invitations to either come up on stage or to find a server in the aisles. In order to honor the sacrifice of Jesus, they had a hundred people serving communion consisting of unleavened bread and wine. A long line of people formed along the entirety of the stadium, creating a breathtaking sight. The news team, without interruption, continued to broadcast the distribution of communion for a few minutes while Enil's camera crews seamlessly transitioned back to the anchor desk. John began speaking.

“Welcome back to our broadcast from Teddy Stadium in Israel. As you have just seen, God has made His Presence known again to all of Israel.”

“I never thought I would witness a story from the Old Testament replayed on live TV,” Geraldo said. “I am sure the people here and our worldwide viewers were amazed to see the fire reach out and devour the Orthodox Jews. The fire consumed everything and left not one ash from the fire. The entire stage was burning.”

“I agree Geraldo,” Mary Ann said, “I was holding my breath, watching as Enoch, Elijah and the Reverend Marks were in the middle of the fire. You could see the fire burning around them. After the fire extinguished itself, their clothes remained unscorched. Reminds me of the story of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. You may remember, King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon threw into a fiery furnace these men, when they refused to bow down to his image. Three were saved, and some believe Jesus appeared in the fire, as the king witnessed them walking in the flames.”

“After what we have observed,” John added, “Israelis who do not believe Jesus is the Messiah must have serious trust issues.”

As he finished his sentence, John caught the sound of an explosion near a door. The room immediately filled with smoke. They heard automatic gunfire coming from the press box entrance doors. John grabbed Mary Ann’s arm and pulled her under the anchor desk. Geraldo followed them. While under the desk, they listened to the machine guns firing too close for comfort. There was another detonation down the hallway. The firefight came closer to them and was nonstop.

A Mossad agent appeared where John, Mary Ann and Geraldo were hiding. She leaned over and told them to get up and stay low.

“Follow me. There is an alternative way out,” she instructed them.

Their group, led by the soldier, began their movement towards the location where the cameras were still actively broadcasting, capturing the intense firefight. The military officer took charge and directed them to the nearest exit door. With their hands clasped together, John and Mary Ann walked out of the broadcast booth. The soldier, with a determined expression on her face, opened the entrance to reveal a steep staircase that lay ahead.

“Quickly, go down these stairs,” the Mossad operative barked, “there are two agents at the bottom. They will get you to safety.”

John turned to talk to Geraldo, but he wasn't present. John became anxious as he shifted his gaze towards the soldier leading them.

“Did you see our other companion, Geraldo? He was right behind me.”

Taking a quick glance at the passageway they had just gone through, she then shifted her focus back to John.

“I do not see him. I'll go back and search for him. Both of you must descend the stairs for safety. I cannot let you go back.”

John, accompanied by Mary Ann, obediently followed the soldier's instructions, and proceeded down the stairs. Once they had reached the bottom landing, they were escorted to a secure area by two soldiers. John approached one of the individuals who happened to be a captain.

“Are we the only ones saved? John questioned.

“Yes, so far. We are trying to find the others.”

### Chapter 60

##### Inside Teddy Stadium, Field Seating Area

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Extraction, Part II

C

hief Petty Officer’s Williams and Jenkins made it easily to the stage area where people were receiving communion. They took up positions merging into the procession line slowly moving toward Marks, who was blessing people and administering communion bread. Once Jenkins received his communion, Williams held out his tongue to receive his. As the Reverend offered the bread, using his jacket as a shield for a weapon, Jenkins leaned in toward Marks, pressing a handgun into his stomach. He whispered into his ear.

“Take no action, or we will eliminate you right now. Act as if your cup is empty and follow the man to my right you just gave communion to. Refrain from doing anything foolish.”

The Reverend did as he was instructed. With Marks between Jenkins and Williams, they moved around the stage toward one of the stadium's exit pathways. Once they reached the exit, Williams and Jenkins kept Marks between them as they walked past the turnstiles into the parking lot.

Williams spoke to Marks.

“You don't have to worry about getting harmed. However, you need to get that big fat butt of yours moving faster.”

When they reached the produce truck, Jenkins banged on the exterior entrance. Upon raising the cargo door, Presley came into view.

“Here is the Reverend. Where is everyone else?” Williams asked.

“I got Geraldo, the rest left. My orders are to leave at once.”

Just as the cargo door closed, two additional individuals arrived without any hostages. It was Rex who delivered the unfortunate news to them.

“We lost our Chief Stankus, the pilot, and two others. I know where the safe house is. I will drive.”

Two stayed with the Reverend and Geraldo. As Rex started up the delivery truck, Presley quickly hopped into the passenger side of the vehicle. Together, they drove cautiously to make their way towards the secure safe house.

### Chapter 61

##### Teddy Stadium, Lower Level

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Missing Two

E

noch walked into the safe room the IDF placed his friends in. He headed straight for John.

“I was told an American Seal team made an attempt on you and your staff’s lives. I am relieved you and Mary Ann are out of danger.”

“So am I, Enoch. Unfortunately, we lost Geraldo.”

“You no longer have your Reverend Marks,” Meyer said. “We cannot find him anywhere.”

“The Reverend was serving communion with me,” Enoch stated. “I never saw him leave.”

Elijah arrived and sat saying nothing. Meyer walked over to him.

“Elijah, we lost two of your Eden II members. Rev. Marks and Geraldo.” Meyer looking at John, added, “so you are aware, we apprehended one of the attackers. Two casualties occurred in the firefight. My soldier swiftly took down, one in the hallway and another descending the stairs. You may have heard the sudden, echoing bursts of gunfire. We took his life just as he was coming down the steps.”

“Do we know who they are?” John asked.

“As I stated earlier, they were an American Seal Team dispatched from Babylon. They had no ID. One of them had on an IDF soldier’s uniform he took when he and another killed two of my agents at the entrance area. We will quickly discover who they are. We have a file on every Seal Team member from America.”

Elijah, sitting quietly, lifted his head as he broke his silence.

“They are gone. They may imminently be the first people executed by guillotine. Cain and his demons intend to use them as an example for anyone considering working with us. Their brand of justice is going to be swift, and they will televise it worldwide. However, Marks and Geraldo, could be the first of the martyrs under the throne of God, described in Revelation.”

Elijah’s statement prompted Mary Ann’s eyes to tear up. John immediately moved closer to her to offer comfort and support. Overwhelmed with emotion, she began to cry, seeking solace on John's shoulder. As his own tears streamed down his cheeks, he held her close in a tight embrace.

Enoch’s eyes were also misting. In his mind, he went back to the moment at Bear News when the Reverend Marks expressed his belief in his words, causing a flash of memories. ‘It won't be long before he reunites with God.’ In order to address the current issues, he put aside his grief and focused on the tasks at hand.

“John, you, and the others come with me.

“Where are you going Enoch?” Meyer asked.

Elijah, understanding Meyer, swiftly reprimanded him.

“Meyer, you will not find Eden II. Do not even ask.”

Meyer was approached by a man in uniform, who whispered something to him before leaving. Meyer now had the latest information.

“We found their escape vehicle. We discovered it abandoned in an alley behind a grocery store five miles away. It was a stolen produce truck.”

“We need to go,” Enoch said. “There is other work to do.”

John, Mary Ann, Enil and Enoch headed to the transports. Perhaps their live broadcast was not a wise decision.

### Chapter 62

##### NASA Headquarters, Planetary Defense

##### Washington DC

##### Wormwood

A

lice addressed the press present for the Comet press conference. “People of the press, I am Alice Markovich, Director of NASA, and with us is Dr. Schmidt, from the Planetary Defense Coordination Office here in DC. Our team has joined us; Sheldon Rikers, Linda Perkins, Logan Diaz, Tom Armstrong and Glenda Purcell.”

“Before we take questions, I want to bring you up to speed with what we presently can confirm. I direct you to the monitor behind me. I'll present a visual representation of the Death Star. This new NEO is not an asteroid. This monster is a comet.”

“The first image is our solar system and galactic neighborhood. In this slide, as you can see; we have catalogued 815 Planets, 190+ Moons, 796,423 asteroids and 3,586 comets. This data is current as of last week before we lost the James Webb Telescope by a fragment of Noelani which somehow traveled back into space.”

“We decided to call this comet Wormwood, a name that evoked both its ethereal beauty and its celestial power. The news media's assertion that it aligns with the prophecy in the Book of Revelation influenced our decision to call it Wormwood. Our astronomers were astonished to discover an unknown celestial body, one that had eluded previous cataloguing efforts. This mysterious visitor to our solar system emerged from the depths of space and unexpectedly appeared on our monitoring systems. This is unprecedented territory for our agency. It is important to note that this comet is distinct from any other comet we have documented.”

“Details are in your press packets. I am going to cover some basic information describing comets. As asteroids. these bodies which travel through space and time have contrasting characteristics. Celestial bodies known as asteroids are composed of metals and rocky material, while comets are made up of ice, dust, unknown organisms, and rocky material. Our preliminary findings and judgements show Wormwood also contains poisonous gasses. Once the comet breaches our atmosphere, it will release chemicals such as ammonia, carbon dioxide, carbon monoxide and methane. We are expecting the comet to release these elements into our upper environment. A substantial portion of our world will be enveloped by these gases. How long? We have no way of knowing.”

“What we are telling you today depends on when and where the actual impact occurs; there could be issues with poisoning of both air and water, possibly worldwide. What we are saying as our description of Wormwood states, water may not be drinkable in certain areas of the world. The gasses released at entry are expected to cause a cooling of the Earth’s temperature. These gases mixing with the ash-cloud circulating in our atmosphere could affect billions of people. Most of the Earth will not have a growing season. Lakes, rivers, seas and oceans are going to become poisonous to life from poisoned rain.”

“I am now opening Wormwood to questions. Before I do, I may direct your inquiries to another of my associates here with me. I have no intention of commenting on Biblical issues. I have discussed this matter already. We caved into the media to call it Wormwood. We intend to take a few questions and please be civil. On another topic, next week we are moving NASA and our associated arms of the organization to Babylon. Washington, after being hit by a fragment, has forced us to move our offices. This move is the decision of the Alliance of Ten. Now your questions.”

They started yelling all at once. She pointed to Abe first.

“Abe Schriever, Washington Post. Alice, is there any concrete scientific evidence showing that Wormwood will contaminate our atmosphere with toxins? I would like to know if there is an estimated impact scenario for this NEO, considering its size, which is twice as large as Noelani.”

“We already addressed your question with added details in your press packets. Regarding impact, as of now we cannot calculate the exact time or area. We are hoping for a sea impact or ocean, like Noelani. When we receive the data, we will release it.”

“Is it your belief that Enoch has knowledge of this?”

“I do not know, Abe. Perhaps you could make arrangements to have a conversation with Enoch. Like Noelani, my response remains unchanged and steadfast.”

Not wanting to further explore this direction, Alice pointed to another reporter.

“Elaine.”

“Elaine Foster, THE Network News. Alice, I think my question might be better suited for Dr. Schmidt. I would like to inquire about the impact information for the comet Wormwood and the potential destruction it may cause to populations. From what I can gather, it appears that this particular aspect has not yet been brought up for discussion. This object is double the size of Noelani.”

Alice looked over at Dr. Schmidt as he walked to the podium. She stepped aside as he answered.

“Elaine, in order to answer your question, it is important to remember that a comet consists mainly of ice. A significant portion of its overall mass will transform into gas and disperse into the atmosphere. The solid core is expected to come into contact with a location on the surface of the Earth. Once again, we find ourselves in a situation where we cannot be completely certain about the comet's behavior.”

“So, what you are saying? is the comet may not be any worse than Noelani. Rather than the direct harm caused by Noelani, the long-term consequences of releasing gases and organic material into the atmosphere could result in a higher number of casualties.”

“Elaine, you are absolutely correct. Wormwood poses a threat to everyone on this planet, leaving no one completely safe.”

Alice walked back to the podium and pointed to Harry.

“Harry McCoy with the Boston Globe. I am wondering if the failed attempt to destroy Noelani, which caused the destruction of many satellites, impacted your capacity to categorize and monitor Wormwood?”

“Harry, just to clarify, we are currently utilizing earth-based telescopes for gathering information. This technology is a reliable method that has been in practice since the 60s and throughout the entirety of the last century.”

“Are you intending to engage in any activities that involve the destruction of Wormwood through explosive means?”

“Harry, there are no intentions to divert the comet.”

Alice pointed to Oscar Weimar.

“Oscar Weimar, Babylon news. This is our first time attending your press conferences and we are new to the experience. At this very moment, we are in the process of launching a news service that will include a newspaper. Could you please give us an estimate of when we can expect to see the impact?”

“Yes, we do Oscar, 4-8 days. We have high expectations that our team of mathematicians will soon be able to determine accurately the exact location and time of impact.”

Alice pointed to Samuel.

“Samuel Heinicke, Jerusalem News Service. Alice, this comet is coming at us immediately after the last one. Are we expecting another one to arrive?”

“No Samuel. We can confirm that there are no celestial bodies nearby for both the near future and the next fifty years.”

“One more question,” as Alice pointed to Susan.

“Susan Whitaker of THE Network. Alice, Aafre Waldger, ordered global beverage plants to transform their facilities from producing beer and soda to bottling fresh drinking water. Once we receive a notification about the impact area for Wormwood, will the water flow towards that location?”

“I don’t know Susan. Bringing up canned water now is a non-issue and doesn't warrant any further discussion. Our concern is the worldwide contamination of water caused by the comet, leaving a trail of poisoned streams, lakes, and oceans. When it comes to the impact of acid rain, bodies of fresh water and groundwater are at risk. We will be watching intently, observing every detail, and strategizing our next move. The current data we have is insufficient to draw any conclusions. Unfortunately, that's all we have to offer for today. We understand that you still have unanswered questions. In their relentless quest, NASA is diligently seeking indisputable answers. Our team must resume work now.”

The chaos started with reporters spurting out questions, shoving and pushing toward the podium.

Alice's team made their exit through the side door, leaving just before security locked it tight. Alice's eyes widened in disbelief as she looked at Dr. Schmidt, finally realizing the impending arrival of the Comet.

“I cannot believe we are facing two near-Earth objects (NEOs) consecutively.”

### Chapter 63

##### Meeting room, Nebuchadnezzar II Tower

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Captives

J

amal addressed Cain. “Our captives arrived this morning, President Cain. The surviving members of the Seal Team had no issues leaving the safe house from the Arab Quarter in Israel.”

“Where are the individuals we have taken as prisoners now, Jamal?”

“They are in a holding cell we built for securing prisoners if needed.”

“Have we questioned them yet?”

“Not really. They were asked about the hidden location of Eden II, and they claimed ignorance. They told us they use transports like the one we have to get there. Their claim is that they have no knowledge of where the transports landed.”

“I doubt they do. Eden II is hidden well. For security reasons, each of them arrived using a transport. They would not be aware of their destination. There are no windows and time stands still from point to point.”

“Cain, what are our plans for them?”

“I want them removed from their cells. Put them up together in a suite at the Palace Hotel. Give them ‘carte blanche,’ for room service. Place ankle monitors on them to prevent them from wandering off. Let them use the exercise rooms and the pools. Get them clothing and whatever else they need. Keep them guarded 24 Hours a day.”

“I'm amazed you are pampering the prisoners as if they were royalty.”

“What is the issue, Jamal? They are our guests for now. We can take pictures of them lounging around the pool, or at dinner, or at the bar sipping a drink. Taking good care of them will confuse the world and Eden II, as to our intentions.”

“What if Enoch comes and tries to rescue them?”

“Like I said, keep watch over them. Enoch is not stupid. He would not risk the capture of a transport to rescue them.”

“I can tell you I am concerned. However, we will follow your plan.”

“Happy you agree with me, Jamal. Until I decide otherwise, we will treat them as guests. Ensure that THE Network reports the apprehension of the two terrorists held here.”

“Whatever you say. I guarantee your instructions are followed to the ‘T.’”

When Jamal left, Cain turned to Sir Devon Jordan.

“Too bad we failed to apprehend John. The good news is we captured two of them.”

“I am surprised you got them, son. Why the royal treatment for them?”

“If we are nice, it's possible we can flip one or both. Maybe neither one. Most likely, they won't change their position. We need to have a trial. Make a big deal out of it. Charge them with international terrorism, let them get a lawyer. Once found guilty, they are destined to be the first of many Christians we will decapitate.”

“You’re sadistic, Cain. “

“So are you, father.”

### Chapter 64

##### Great Room

##### Eden II

##### Missing Friends

E

nil, Mary Ann, Enoch, and John were discussing the upcoming evening broadcast. They were at odds of how to process Geraldo's and Marks capture. John asked Mary Ann her opinion. “John, I am not sure. I am inclined to support not saying anything until Babylon or THE Network announces their capture. We no longer maintain any political capital, as we had when we were broadcasting at Bear from New York. Let them take the initiative. Eventually Babylon will announce The Ten captured them.”

“They will probably claim they apprehended two of the internationally wanted terrorists,” Enil said. “They will include Enoch, Elijah, and you, still being at large. Of course, others that are here. Mauvad, Mark Armstrong and Mahoney. Their wish list goes on forever.”

“Elijah said they will face execution,” John stated with more emotion than normal. “He referred to the Christians to be killed by guillotine described by John in the Bible.”

Enoch had been listening to the back-and-forth conversation as he entered the debate.

“It might be possible they try to flip them first. We can assume that does not work. Their next step will be a well-publicized trial in Babylon, charging them as terrorists. I am with Mary Ann. Avoid the conversation until they show their hand.”

John checked the captives off their list to report.

“Our next big story up for discussion tonight is Wormwood. We watched THE Network's coverage of the press conference at NASA. They referred to you Enoch, to tell them when and where the comet will impact.”

“We can accommodate NASA. Tonight’s broadcast will work.”

“Enoch, how destructive will Wormwood be?” Mary Ann asked.

John couldn't help but notice the somber look in Enoch's eyes, a clear sign that something was bothering him.

“Enoch… is this ‘Third Trumpet’ difficult for you?” John inquired.

“Yes, Wormwood is one of the worst woes of God. I wish it were not so, however it must occur. We must follow God’s plan through.”

“Could you stop Wormwood?” John whispered, the weight of the world evident in his voice.

“Yes, John,” he replied, his voice tinged with reluctance, “I suppose I could, if I found it necessary. That being said, I would opt against doing that. In the distant past, I dared to question the divine fury of God. After this experience, I have learned to never doubt the plans that God has in store. Along with Elijah, I am granted the power to control both the earth and the heavens. It is our duty to fulfill our roles and responsibilities. Just as Christ begged for His cup to be removed, I fervently implored God to spare lives. Despite everything, I am resolved to do what I am meant to do.”

“We understand Enoch. The weight of demolishing cities and causing widespread death must be incredibly challenging. It is evident that you are diligently following God's mandate, carrying out His will with conviction. Accomplishing your destiny alone is something I'm not entirely confident in my ability to do.”

“Yes, you could, John. You, as I, realize it’s God's will which dictates the universe, not His creation.”

“Where can we expect Wormwood to impact?” Enil asked.

“Wait until the broadcast. During the airing, I shall give you your answers. Once I answer, you and the entire world will understand.”

“We haven't completed the summary of the teachings by Elijah at Teddy Stadium,” Enil added.

“This would be good news,” Enoch exclaimed! “The country of Israel is now on the brink of becoming a Christian Nation. We need to highlight that Israel has become the shining example for the world.”

“Great,” John said. “We will begin our broadcast with the recap of Elijah's sermon, then Wormwood. We are not going to bring up anything concerning Marks or Geraldo until THE Network breaks the news.”

“John, how is Geraldo’s family managing the situation?” Enoch asked.

“Veronica is assisting his wife and children to the best of her abilities.”

“I want to see them to help ease their sorrows.”

“Enoch, if you wish, I can take you to them now,” Mary Ann offered.

“Indeed, I believe so, please. John and Enil, I assume we are through here?”

“Yes, we have finished,” John replied.

Enoch stood up as he and Mary Ann walked through the door.

“Enil, what will he say to her?” John asked.

“He will tell her Geraldo will soon be a martyr and join God in Heaven. Geraldo and Marks may be the first public martyrs of the ‘Time of Sorrows’.”

### Chapter 65

##### Sanctuary, Glacier National Park Interior

##### Goat Haunt, MT

##### Visitor

T

he man in the lookout overlooking the lake got Benjamin's attention. “Benjamin, I need you to come to our lookout,” the man said.

“Why?”

“There is a man in a large inflatable raft, towing a second one headed toward us. The vessel is covered. It appears there is a lot of stuff piled on the makeshift boat.”

Ben stood up from his rock desk he made and followed to the lookout tower. He looked through the telescope. He saw the two rafts using an electric motor coming across the lake. Alarm bells went off in his head. They never receive visitors.

“Get Richard and a few other men. We will meet this person as he lands.”

As the messenger left, Ben started the long trail toward the lake. It took him close to half an hour to reach their makeshift docks. By the time he got there, the rafts were tied off, and this unknown person was already standing on their dock.

“Is this the sanctuary?” he asked in Hebrew.

“Yes, and who might you be?”

He walked over to Ben, extending his hand.

“I am Paul Morgan from Israel,” he said, speaking the Hebrew language.

“My name is Benjamin. Like you, I am from Israel and one of the few Hebrew speakers. Most speak English.”

They shook hands as Ben wondered why a Jew from Israel was here.

“What's your purpose here and what's in the raft you're towing?”

“Enoch sent me to you. I am here to assist your people.”

As they were speaking, Reverend Richard, with a few men, arrived at the dock.

“Richard, meet Paul from Israel. He was dispatched to us by Enoch to help us.”

Richard and Paul shook hands as the conversation switched to English.

“Paul, why are you here to assist us?”

“Benjamin, did you see the sermon in Israel?”

“Yes, we did.”

“I am one of the ones who accepted Jesus as the Messiah. Once I did, Enoch mentioned he needed my support. I agreed to lend a hand, and now I am here to drill a water well. This is challenging work. We will be using hand tools, a drilling machine, pipe, connectors, and a few drill bits.”

“Why is drilling necessary?”

“Wormwood Richard, Wormwood. You need freshwater? Right?”

Ben realized after he mentioned Wormwood why Paul was sent here.

“Do you need a survey?”

“Not really Benjamin. Enoch told me where to dig. Right here where we are. I have the equipment that is essential. If you and your men are able to help, we can get this unloaded and start. To ensure a fresh water supply, it is necessary to drill down 2,000 feet.”

“That’s pretty deep Paul.”

“Yes, it is. In Israel, sometimes we bore deeper. We understand you have a generator that can turn out 220 volts. Kindly bring the device down here. Also, fifty men with strong backs to help us.”

“You want to start now?”

“Yes sir. Wormwood arrives soon. We have little time to finish drilling. The lake and snow will become contaminated. We need to do exactly what Enoch told me and my associates he dispatched to other places.”

“Others?”

“Yes, everyone else. Enoch dispatched nearly a thousand of us all over the world to dig these wells.”

“Where do we start?”

“About twenty feet over there.”

He pointed to a depressed area near the lake.

“We won’t hit much rock there. The natural filtering of water going down to the aquifer will clean the water. So, are you ready?”

“You bet Paul,” Richard exclaimed!

Paul turned toward the men as he began giving them instructions. Richard and Ben started helping Paul unload. Richard thought to himself, ‘Enoch you, and the divine have a plan for your flock.’

### Chapter 66

##### THE Network. New Babylon Studios

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Unveiling

T

he announcer began, “People of the world; welcome to THE Network News, live from New Babylon City, with your hosts Brad Williams, Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan.”

As the camera glided towards Brad, the sound of his steady voice filled the room, adding to his confident presence.

“We extend a warm welcome to our viewers as we are now broadcasting from New Babylon, for the first time. Today, we're kicking off early to cover a lot of breaking news. But first, let's welcome our special guest, Aafre Waldger, before we move on to the headlines. He is the Chief Architect and builder of the world’s first green city, known as New Babylon. As everyone knows, this is where the newly established Ten Nation Alliance of Earth is based. However, I do not want to take away from Mr. Waldger’s incredible story about our new city.”

“We would like all of you to welcome Aafre Waldger to our state-of-the-art studios.”

As Aafre entered the studio, Brad, Nancy, and Catherine stood and shook his hand. They took their seats while Aafre sat across from them on a matching couch.

“Our studios here are incredible, Aafre,” Brad said. “And… our accommodations exceeded the best buildings on Fifth Avenue. I find it astonishing you built Babylon in less than two years.”

“Building on a tight timeline was a challenge. However, we planned Babylon a long time ago. Many who saw the future realized we needed a global capital. The arrival of the aliens signaled the need to unite and fight back against their destructive forces. Our new city is the first step towards rebuilding the world after defeating these terrorists.”

“Aafre, describe the city to our viewers,” Nancy said. “We will split the screen, allowing the audience to see the images taken by the drones.”

“Most definitely, Nancy. We can start by letting people know Babylon is the world’s first green city. A combination of solar, windmill, water, powers this urban center.”

On the split screen, images of the windmill electricity generators spinning in the desert appeared, creating a mesmerizing sight.

“Our transportation infrastructure runs on electricity and hydrogen. Cooling systems use a combination of water and electrical mechanisms. Some battery-powered cars are visible on the monitor. Officials of the government for security reasons use the vehicles. I will explain why there are very few vehicles or trucks on our roads, momentarily.”

“Our city itself is 50 square miles or 32,000 acres, not counting Military installations. Using metrics, the municipality is 130 square kilometers. The aerial shot you are seeing shows the entirety of our city from a bird's-eye view. The layout of our urban area resembles a wagon wheel. This means any road goes to the metropolis where the brass and glass tower named Nebuchadnezzar II stands. This towering building is the home of the Ten Nation Alliance, our world's government.”

“Aafre, what about individual living quarters?” Catherine asked.

“Our city itself can hold approximately one million people. Beyond the city, counting the military bases and support areas, another 10 million. Within the metropolitan area, each person such as yourself Catherine, gets a two or three-bedroom, 1,200 square foot apartment. This includes an outdoor balcony. Each housing unit is a ten-story high rise. Regardless of your position in the city, they assign you the same accommodations. You can view the exterior and interior shots of our apartments on your monitor.”

“Our building's roofs are green-colored metal. The structures are painted white. Interiors, as the exterior walls, consist of 70 percent glass. The material we use can withstand temperatures of up to 150 degrees of direct sunlight and not heat up a room. We have an abundant supply of raw materials here in Iraq for making windows.”

They all chuckled at his joke about the material made from silica, knowing he was referring to sand.

“In our residential buildings there are gymnasiums, basketball courts, handball courts, spas, pools, a convenience store, and full-service bars. The images you are seeing on your monitor represent most of the structures.”

“We build our living areas using a pod style. A pod is six buildings surrounding a green space. Within the park, there are playgrounds, outdoor activity areas, grills and picnic areas. Of course, every building has access to a golf course. We have 20 of them. If you look at your monitor, you will notice each location is an 18-hole championship course designed by the Professional Golfers Association.”

“We have two domed stadiums for sports. Each sports venue holds 80,000 people. The monitor displays the one in the northern region of the city. Our other sports facility is located on the southern side of Babylon. This way, we can have a cross town rivalry in sporting events!”

“In another unique part of this new city, tunnels connect each building. They are well lit, and transportation to any location within the city is available from there. Our method involves utilizing high speed magnetic trains to transport people and goods through the city. There is no need for big heavy delivery trucks or semis. We use small to exceptionally large containers to deliver goods to stores using tunnels. The same with your grocery stores, which are located underground and out of the sun and convenient. When you go shopping, the store employees put the items you buy into a container, and then they deliver your order to your home within half an hour. No cars, no pollution. Looking at your monitor, you can see the underground rail station. At this stop, there are several stores, including a supermarket. They repeat this station design throughout the entire city.”

“What about security and police presence?” Nancy asked.

“Our police do not carry weapons. They have electric and hydrogen-powered police cars, but few of them. Police walk a beat as they did in years past, like England’s Bobbies. We have absolutely no crime and no drugs. If, for some reason, an individual or individuals were to commit a crime, we would banish them from the city. Any person who has a firearm, or uses a firearm in a crime, the penalty is death. Therefore, when people moved here, they left their firearms at home.”

“Do you have nations sectors within this urban area?” Catherine asked.

“No. There are no combining of people together based on ethnic background, color of skin, or any other racial types. When you come here as a delegate, or a worker, we assign your housing based on your need and availability. Your residence may be in Building B, third floor. Your neighbors may originate from any part of the world or be a company CEO.”

“Speaking of businesses, Aafre, I understand many are transferring their corporate headquarters here?” Brad questioned.

“You are correct Brad. Around 100 Fortune 500 companies have leased office space here. The Stock Exchanges from America and the Commodity Markets are now found in the city of New Babylon. Same with the European, Chinese, Japanese and other countries' financial systems. As you are aware, Brad, we consolidated the world’s markets into one large conglomerate.”

“We want to ask how you are feeding people here, Aafre?” Catherine inquired. “We understand your process is unique to a city built in the middle of a desert.”

“We are using stores.” At his little joke, Aafre's laughter erupted, echoing through the air. The others joined in for a few moments.

“However, in all seriousness, most of the edible items we buy are grown inside warehouses outside the city. We have the world’s largest vertical farms, right here in New Babylon. Instead of sunlight, we utilize low power LED lights. Our central computers control lighting for each individual plant’s needs. This includes watering and nutrients needed. We use a closed loop aeroponics system, which mists the roots of the greens and reduces water usage by 95%. The growth of plants is twice as fast as traditional farms. Each of our warehouses produces over two million pounds of food every three months. We have twenty locations and are building additional sites. This means we are producing 160 million pounds of nutritious sustenance using less space, replacing what a thousand-acre farm could produce. We accomplish growing food at half the costs, half the water, and half the fertilizers. To our consumers' delight, absolutely no pesticides. The monitor shows one of our warehouses, where we grow tomatoes.”

“That’s amazing, Aafre. 160 million pounds of food,” Brad remarked.

“And... Brad, it will double each year, for the next ten years.”

“What of the hanging gardens Aafre?” Catherine asked. “We see you have rebuilt them around the original ruins.”

“Yes, we have. The new center is twice the size of the gardens built for Queen Amytis. Our new buildings are located exactly where they were during the Queen's time. The difference is bigger buildings. We have rebuilt the ascending series of tiered gardens, which contain a wide variety of flowers, trees, shrubs and vines. The gardens, as then, resemble a large green mountain. We constructed the pathways and arches using similar bricks from the period. These bricks are created using the same processes that were used in 100 AD. We spared no expense building our brand-new jewel of the desert.”

On their monitor, they could see the entrance to the gardens, with people strolling in and out, and the sound of laughter and chatter filling the air.

“What did it cost to build Babylon?” Brad asked.

“The entire project required less money when comparing it to the United States military budget for two years. Around three and a half trillion American dollars, or using today's money, one trillion world credits.”

“Is New Babylon the standard for building new cities?” Nancy asked.

“Definitely, Nancy. New Babylon is just the beginning. Our goal is to build comparable sites worldwide, replacing the cities of the past. These modern cities require less maintenance, power, and are safer. The globe is changing as we speak, with cities planned as Babylon. Hope this answers your question.”

“Absolutely. We understand Aafre, global leaders reside here permanently?”

“Nancy, you are correct. They have their staffs here and conduct business for their country in Babylon. Leaders return to their countries for extended periods of time to take care of their needs at home. They carry out their executive decisions and governmental work here, within the offices of Nebuchadnezzar II Tower.”

“We understand the Church and Vatican areas that were destroyed in Rome are being rebuilt here?” Catherine inquired.

“Pope Peter the 2nd is overseeing the Church being rebuilt in the northern part of the city. Fortunately, prior to the asteroid which destroyed Rome and the Vatican; most of the artifacts were removed, then brought here. The new Church will have a modern design and house the artifacts, library and other items from the Vatican, in an attached museum. The inside of the church will hold 2,000 people. As you can see from the monitor, the building is nearly finished. Note the Obelisk from St. Peter's Square we saved is found within the Courtyard.”

“One other important item Catherine, no one knows about. I am announcing it today. The Sistine Chapel ceiling and walls, remember them? We had the ceiling and walls cut into pieces, crated, and sent here. The newly restored version at the museum will thrill visitors. The main difference between the Vatican there and here is the Church's inclusive welcome to all religions. Peter the 2nd intends to explain the world religions’ consolidation soon. Holy Wars will cease to exist.”

“What of medical facilities Aafre?” Brad asked.

“Glad you asked Brad. The Mayo Clinic is moving to the city. The CDC from America is also coming here. We can add to this, major schools are relocating their universities to new facilities we have built for them. This includes Oxford, Harvard, Princeton, and many more. This encompasses their entire curriculum. They are building campuses outside the city. Most of the buildings will be finished, and the moves completed within the next year and a half. Babylon is a global metropolis. Education, government, technology, medical breakthroughs, open religion, and more. Everything a person would need is here.”

“Apart from the city, there are also military bases stationed nearby. Can you explain this?” Brad inquired, his eyebrows raised in anticipation.

“The world's militaries are currently stationed outside the city. We allocated 100 square miles for bases around Babylon. This includes housing, training, and a gigantic airfield capable of handling 1,000 planes. Today’s military is the world’s army. Equipment and armaments are no longer controlled by individual countries. The military is centralized. General Stoups of America is the top commander. Each of The Ten have placed their militaries and equipment under one world control. World peace is finally here. No militants or country will ever consider attacking us. We have 200 million active servicemen. Not all soldiers from The Ten are in Babylon. We distribute units globally for peacekeeping.”

“What about a standard, Aafre?” I understand the United Nations emblem will not be it. Can you provide a timeline for The Ten's design approval?”

“Brad, I am pleased you asked. We are planning to have a design contest. I will announce it now. Here are the guidelines. You can send your artwork to a simple address. Babylon Flag. Our competition rules state, you cannot be a professional manufacturer of fabric, flags, or any other commercial entity associated with flag making. We are encouraging young people to send in their designs. We will choose one just before we select a leader.”

“I understand you have partially completed buildings, which will be as Las Vegas or Monte Carlo, here in the desert?”

“Yes, we have. Three casino chains have moved within the city. They have a lengthy stretch where they are building new gaming houses. You can see on your monitor a pair of our casinos are open. The bright lights and shows of Vegas are here for our residents. We also have a theater area for cinema and live performances. This includes ballet, plays, movie theaters, and the philharmonic. We have relocated the Boston Pops here, the Metropolitan from New York, and other theater companies, who will only perform in New Babylon.”

“This sounds wonderful, Aafre,” Brad said. “We understand THE Network with the help of your designers and architects are producing a series of documentaries about the city.”

“Yes, this is true. We desire the world to perceive a city's possibilities. We will strive to build even more like Babylon.”

“Thank you for your time, Aafre. We'll be back shortly with more news for today.

### Chapter 67

##### Broadcast Studio

##### Eden II

##### House of Cards

J

ohn said to Enil, “That was an interesting segment covering the unveiling of New Babylon.”

“Yes, it was. Too bad Lucifer waited until now to build cities, as they should have been built years ago.”

“His city of the future is a house of cards,” Enoch said. “With the devil, his actions are designed to instill false hope in the rest of the world. Scripture states: the entire world will wonder after the Antichrist. Its segments, such as the unveiling of their model metropolis Babylon, makes them look good. When Jesus makes his return, then you will see a world of cities built beyond your imagination.”

“John, should we wait until they finish their next segment or override them now?” Enil asked.

“We want to see if they mention the captives. If they do, we can release our own information, rebutting the issue.”

“Makes sense, I agree.”

“Enoch, any opinion?”

“We wait John. A few more hours won’t make much difference.”

### Chapter 68

##### THE Network Broadcast Studios

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Criminal Charges

A

fter the break, THE Network resumed its program. “Welcome back, viewers. I am Brad Williams, with my co-anchors, Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan. We just finished our interview with Aafre Waldger, discussing the modern world capital, New Babylon. We now turn to other stories.”

“Three nights ago, within the city of Jerusalem, the world’s police force was able to capture two terrorists from the phantom illegal outpost known as Eden II. They are awaiting trial in New Babylon.”

“Regarding the men’s detention, New Babylon’s rules of incarceration differ from what we normally perceive after an arrest. The terrorists, Reverend Thomas Marks and co-anchor, Geraldo Vasquez, are a part of the outlaw news organization called Eden II, with John Roddenburg, are guests in a hotel.”

“They have free rein in the facility, including room service, restaurants, bar, and health facilities. They can wear whatever clothing they wish. They were granted complimentary credits to any of the stores within the city of Babylon. They each have an ankle monitor strapped to their leg. We have pictures of them enjoying the services of the establishment. The first is at a restaurant which specializes in sushi and Japanese cuisine. They appear to be comfortable. Our next picture is their living quarters at the hotel. It's nicer than my apartment. Our third picture shows them at a spa, getting massages and relaxing.”

“What you are seeing is The Ten’s new way of handling alleged criminals, not yet convicted of a crime.”

“We have received information that they have the option to seek legal representation of their choice. This lawyer can come from any place they choose. The government will pay for any expenses and billing hours. Reverend Marks asked us to broadcast, he and Geraldo wish to be represented by Mark Armstrong, who used to practice in Chicago. We understand he currently handles legal issues for members of Eden II.”

“Mr. Armstrong may be concerned about his safety. If you are listening to our broadcast, the Alliance will guarantee your safe passage to Babylon, and return to Eden II at the conclusion of the trial. As a programming note, we have yet to hear from Mr. Armstrong.”

“In other news today….”

### Chapter 69

##### Broadcast Studios

##### Eden II

##### Criminal Defense

J

ohn said tersely, “Shut it off, Enil. I have heard enough!”

“Do you not wish to hear their other thoughts?”

“No, I don’t. Right now, I want someone to find Mark Armstrong and let us replay this segment to him regarding Geraldo and the Reverend.”

“Sure John.”

Enil started toward the door, and as expected, Armstrong walked in. He swiftly made his way over to John.

“John, did you happen to witness THE Network's Broadcast?”

“Yes Mark, I definitely saw it,” he confirmed, nodding his head angrily.

“I am surprised. Are they trying to orchestrate a scheme against me? What do you think?” Mark asked, his voice filled with concern.

“Yes, I do,” John confirmed, his words overflowing with determination.

“Maybe not,” Enoch interjected, his tone suggesting a hint of optimism.

“Could you say that again? Seriously, Enoch? Are you kidding?”

“No, I am not. I know these demons. I have the ability to guarantee Mark's safety should he choose to go.”

“First off, how? Why would Armstrong go? There is going to be a kangaroo court proceeding. They intend to televise it like that football player’s murder trial. Make a big deal out of it.”

“You are right, John, and yes, they will attempt to influence the legal system. But… Armstrong and his defendants can tell their stories of God, everlasting life, and how Lucifer and Cain are corrupt. Great press coverage worldwide. We might if I am able to swing it, televise the trial live, assuming we work it right.”

“How Enoch? Elijah told us the Guillotine will execute them.”

“Assume John, if we do nothing to help them, Elijah is right. However, I have power over the demons, and they know it. When I am gone, then they will rule the world. They are somewhat under my control until that time.”

“What kind of power?”

“I can destroy their precious city, for starters.”

“How will you negotiate or even contact them?”

“Let me deal with this issue. I possess both the ability and determination to execute our plan. So, Mark, are you with me?”

“That I am, Enoch. I have complete faith you can organize this.”

“Good. Enil, schedule a meeting.”

“Yes sir. I will send the message right away.”

“Now, John, let us get ready for our broadcast. I must leave soon.”

### Chapter 70

##### President Cain’s Office, Nebuchadnezzar Tower

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### The Setup

S

ir Jordan addressed Cain. “I have a message directed toward you.”

“What Beelzebub?” he exclaimed, frustration evident in his voice.

I have repeatedly instructed you to avoid uttering that particular name. Your insolence has reached its limit, and I can no longer tolerate it. So, put an end to it. The communication, originating from Enoch, is urgent. We have made arrangements to meet with him again at my home.”

“What is the reason?” Cain's voice trembled with anxiety as he asked.

“It relates to the invitation you sent out on THE Network's broadcast, proposing Mark Armstrong as the defense attorney for our prisoners in your terrorist trial.”

“This does interest me. Very much so. When?”

“Tomorrow morning.”

“Tell him yes, twice!” he gleefully exclaimed.

### Chapter 71

##### Broadcast Studios

##### Eden II

##### The Third Trumpet

A

s the countdown clock started down to zero, the announcer began. “People of the world, welcome to Eden II News, live with John Roddenburg and his co-anchor, Mary Ann Sinclair.”

“Good evening everyone, I am John Roddenburg reporting live, the real news of today from Eden II.”

“Tonight, Enoch will explain to the world the consequences of the oncoming comet, Wormwood. Our coverage includes the kidnapping of our co-anchor Geraldo Vasquez and Reverend Marks by an American Seal Team, who took them to New Babylon, where they are currently being held.”

“According to sources, they are expected to be tried in New Babylon. The charges they face are related to terrorism. We do not have many details regarding their exact whereabouts. We have the pictures THE Network showed us during their broadcast. We are going to update you with more information as it becomes available.”

“Let us turn now to the object in every person's mind, the comet Wormwood. Enoch, please tell us what we need to know concerning this comet.”

With a concerned look, John turned his gaze toward Enoch. The camera of Eden II crept toward him for a closeup, showing his emotionless face as he sat there. He spoke in a monotone.

“This is the ‘Third Trumpet’ we discussed a few weeks ago. There is a reason why they named this comet Wormwood. The composition of the comet has been described by many news stations and NASA. The comet comprises gaseous ice and organisms. When entering the atmosphere, the eventual impact of its core will poison one third of the world's fresh water.”

“The impact location of Wormwood is unknown to you. I will give you the exact coordinates, as I have with every disaster during this time. The consequence will affect the United States of America. Ground zero is going to occur in the middle of Lake Michigan.”

Enoch was silent while John was thinking of asking him another question. He gave him space and refrained. He finally lifted his head again.

“This impact will destroy every city within the Great Lakes region. Wormwood will cause the rivers feeding into and from Lake Superior, Lake Michigan, Lake Huron, Lake Erie, and Lake Ontario to be undrinkable. This includes any rivers which touch the Great Lakes. Some of the rivers on the list are the Hudson in New York, the Illinois River, Mississippi, Missouri, and other feeder rivers. Chicago, Cleveland, Milwaukee, Green Bay, Detroit, Toronto, Canada, Albany, Syracuse, and New York will sustain a tremendous amount of damage. Many of these cities will be destroyed.”

“Water systems in these cities will be unable to provide drinkable water for nearly a year. The atmosphere's poison from Wormwood is expected to spread to one third of the world's freshwater. This is going to happen because of poisoned rain and runoff.”

“God is punishing humanity for its refusal to believe in Jesus. God has unleashed his wrath before with the other Trumpets and in ancient times. When mankind is disobedient, He makes sure they know who God is.”

“Why America again?” John asked.

“John, take a look at the land of the free. We had this conversation several times before, about a country founded by people seeking religious freedom. In this current era, despite its transgressions on Native People and use of slavery at one time, built a nation around God. This evolved into America. After World War II, the United States of America became a symbol of Godliness to all nations. America changed slowly at the beginning, then quickly descended into the abyss of sin. The legal system seized power in the country. Initially, it was a twisting of the definition concerning free speech. This led to porn being legalized as a free expression. America exported this globally. Then, they spread deviant sexual acts across the globe. Then they legitimized divorce. The family unit broke up and was no longer sacred. Young people had no respect for family or society's rules. They now had selfish rights! Parents could no longer punish children without the government interfering. Drugs took over the cities. Many became addicted to substances, such as narcotics, sex, and violence.”

“The computer age made everything accessible. Corrupting not only adults but also the youth. Entertainment shows started depictions of sexual acts and Americans let their children watch. Cussing became mainstream. Vulgar words, God's name in vain, were commonplace in America. So, you realize, John, the demons seized control of our world. They gained authority over our governments and our courts. They led America to become the new Sodom and Gomorrah of humanity. Humanity worships money. Humanity worships sex. Today’s world mirrors the time of Noah.”

“Today's society has reached new heights of corruption among people of all ages. The Church of Saint Peter became corrupted with men of no conscience. The Pope will not even excommunicate political leaders who sanction the killing of babies, writing laws allowing abortion. The Church is full of sexual perversion and scandals throughout the world. Similar to the rest of the world, the Church was overwhelmed by supernatural beings. These same evil spirits I bound over 4,500 years ago. They have control of governments and much of gullible humanity.”

“In Europe, the Churches are empty. In America, the Churches transformed into feel good places run by charismatic salespeople and money-hungry pastors, who prey upon the consciousness of the people. They do not invite the presence of the Holy Spirit into their lives. They say what you are doing is okay. They marry anyone to another without any conscience. The state of the world is corrupt, John. The world is without God. America became without belief. America infected the rest of the planet with its laws.”

“But... God promised, he would not devastate the planet with another flood, and He has not. Instead, He revealed to Daniel, in his dreams, God's punishment for the last days. He informed John about the perils being sent from Heaven to humanity in Revelation.”

“What I am saying, John, is America is to blame.”

“The hour has come for the fulfillment of the Prophets' writings and prophecies. God never misses a prophecy. He is precisely on schedule. The Bible says,

Woe unto the woman who has a child.’ As the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying, and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark. They knew not, until the flood came, and took them all away; so, shall also the coming of the Son of man be.”

“These initial disasters were just the beginning for mankind. God's anger on the earth, controlled by the demons, will only get worse. But also with Wormwood, the entire world is going to suffer from tainted water. So, it is not exclusively America.”

As the camera focused on Enoch, he fell silent, his eyes revealing the deep sorrow he carried for the fate of earth's inhabitants. Enoch remained silent. Finally, he lifted his head, his eyes meeting John's once again.

“I hope this will answer you and your viewers' questions about why America.”

Although John had a preference for it not to occur, he comprehended and accepted what was happening. He confirmed and supported Enoch's statements, reiterating their importance.

“Wormwood isn't the end of the woes,” John clarified. “I understand this. However, I wish there was another way.”

“There isn’t John. There is only God’s way. As the destruction arrives and the pain inflicted on humanity continues, non-believers will look up into the Heavens and realize it was God they turned against. For many, it will be too late.”

John was now upset. His coolness in front of the camera was about to be compromised. He needed to take a breather. He motioned to Enil to break for a public service announcement.

### Chapter 72

##### The Estate Of Sir Jordan Devon

##### Cliffs of Dover, England

##### Daniel Webster

E

noch’s transport landed on the green grass near the glassed wall home of Sir Jordan Devon. Once he disembarked from the aircraft, he proceeded to walk purposefully towards the glass doors. As Lucifer smoothly slid the door open, Enoch made his entrance and then pulled a chair from the nearby table before comfortably taking a seat. The conversation was initiated by Cain, who took the lead.

“Can you please explain the reason behind the Council's request for this meeting? I believed that all the necessary topics were discussed and addressed in detail during our previous session. Is your purpose here to surrender and go back to your place of origin? Is our strength too overpowering for the Council to engage in battle with us? It seems like you are interested in proposing another truce. Am I correct?”

As Enoch gazed at Cain, he couldn't help but ponder what the outcome would have been if Cain had chosen to remain under the rule of Adam. He would possibly not be the sarcastic fool living in rebellion as he was today. Enoch made a conscious effort to speak with as much control as he could muster.

“Cain, there is nothing among the things you mentioned that caught my attention. I have come here with an entirely different purpose.”

“Enoch, could you share with us the great noble and godly mission that has brought you here today?”

The child of Lucifer is truly the antithesis of Christ. Answering Cain's sarcastic question, Enoch's thoughts solidified his certainty.

“I am interested in making a deal with both you and Lucifer that involves Reverend Marks and Geraldo.”

Cain had a strong expectation that this would happen without a doubt. Before Enoch could complete his statement, he had already begun to reply. It is clear that Cain never grasped the concept that the person who speaks first is the one who loses in this situation.

“We will never give them over to you, simply because of who you are, or rather, who we assume you think you are. I want to reassure you that the possibility of that happening is absolutely out of the question.”

“Cain, I appreciate your input, but I have come up with a better idea. I'm curious to find out if your trial is open to the public and if there are any plans to broadcast it for wider viewing.”

“Yes, it will be aired worldwide. To show how you and your terrorist friends at Eden II are destroying their world. In addition to that, my father took on the important position of the lead prosecutor for this specific situation.”

“We assumed as much. He has a lot of practice with the council. The only problem is, he never won a case.”

“That’s not true Enoch. I have emerged victorious in many cases,” Lucifer interjected.

“I'm not here to argue with either of you. My purpose today is to ask for permission for my attorney from Eden II to defend these men being tried in your court system. I want safe passage for him coming and going.”

While Cain continued to maintain his arrogant and superior attitude, he couldn't help but laugh at Enoch's remarks.

“You are kidding, are you not? We will give them a public defender.”

“I am sure you would. However, Cain, THE Network has already stated you will accept this. Are they lying? Putting this aside, your father boasts he has never lost a case. I am certain that with a trial broadcast using worldwide TV, he will love to convict these two men. I only want the accused to receive the best counsel possible. Do you agree Lucifer?”

“I have no objections to agreeing, Enoch. In fact, I would enjoy it.”

“Knowing that we are aligned in our views is reassuring and positive, and I want to express my gratitude for your support. Before we move forward with the trial, let's address a few logistical matters that we need to agree upon. The primary focus of our discussion will be on how American jurisprudence sets the benchmark for this trial. The second issue that we need to address pertains to the composition of the jury. It is worth mentioning that the jury panel should be composed of individuals who share a similar background and are peers of the two men implicated in the case. Specifically, there will be two groups of potential jurors for this case. One consisting of thirty individuals from Chicago for Geraldo and the other comprising thirty individuals from New York, whish is where The Reverend is from. The selection process for the jurors will involve picking six individuals from each of the pools. Random selection is imperative when it comes to choosing these jurors in order to maintain an unbiased process. To guarantee their involvement in the trial, you must make arrangements for their transportation to Babylon and ensure that their needs are taken care of throughout the entire duration of the proceedings.”

“I agree with your request, Enoch,” Lucifer replied being totally in agreement without even considering Cain. “These men will receive a fair trial. I will even agree to release them to you, assuming, of course, that they are acquitted. I am confident people hate these men, as much as they hate, you!”

“This is ridiculous,” Cain said. “You know Enoch, we cannot lose. We have these suspects dead to rights.”

“Ever hear of the story of Daniel Webster and the Devil, Cain?”

“No, not really,” Cain replied, completely unaware of what he was talking about.

“*The Devil and Daniel Webster* is a short story by *Stephen Vincent Benet*. In Benet's narrative, a New Hampshire farmer sells his soul to the devil and Daniel Webster, a fictional version of the famous political leader, lawyer and orator, defends him. The devil or Lucifer.” as Enoch looked at Cain smiling, “lost that one.”

“You say it's fiction, Enoch? What is the big deal?”

“Cain, the worldwide attention on this legal case will be a remarkable spectacle, reminiscent of the OJ trial, in the last century. Mark Armstrong is going to defeat your father in court, with a fair judge and impartial jury.”

“I don't have much faith in what you just said, Enoch.”

Despite Cain's sarcasm, Enoch chose to overlook it and proceeded to the next item on his agenda.

“We need to come to an agreement selecting a fair judge. I suggest Judge Jean McAuliffe, of the Southern Districts Appellate Court. She is as impartial as they come.”

“I know her,” Cain said. “She will be fine. This judge does not like criminals. Most of their appeals are struck down by her. Especially death row inmates.”

“Let me confirm with you, Cain, if we have successfully concluded our business.”

“You are wasting your time. However, in good faith, we will agree to your demands.”

“Remember Cain, you are bound to honor these terms. You also realize you are half human. You can be sentenced to death for not adhering to an agreement. Your Father can only be bound.”

“Cain will adhere to the rules,” Lucifer stated. “We will send our transport to pick up Mark Armstrong.”

“Nice try Lucifer. No, I am going to have him sent to you tomorrow. He will take a flight from Tel Aviv. You can have him picked up in Babylon.”

“Fine. When he arrives, we are going to ensure he has access to his clients and accommodations at one of our five-star hotels.”

“Sounds good. That’s about it,” Enoch said.

Cain, true to form, couldn't resist the urge to express himself by flapping his lips and voicing his opinions.

“Remember, you too are human, Enoch. In a very short amount of time, I am going to watch you rot on the streets of Jerusalem. The flies, the bugs, the maggots are going to devour your dead body.”

“Yes, you shall. Enjoy every minute of your three and a half-days of joy. Afterwards, I shall be lifted to Heaven. I am going to return, On the Last Day, to put the chains on you.”

As Enoch stood to leave, he flashed a warm smile at Cain.

### Chapter 73

##### THE Network’s Broadcast Studios

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Mass Evacuations

T

he announcer said, “People of the world, welcome to THE Network News, live from New Babylon City with your host Brad Williams, along with Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan.”

“Good day world, I am Brad Williams. In today’s news from New Babylon, the court proceedings regarding the two alleged terrorists from Eden II, is underway with jury selection. A jury pool of sixty people came from Chicago and New York. Twelve of them will be selected to sit on the jury. This will be The ‘Trial of the Century’, Mark Armstrong, attorney for the defendants declared during a news conference. He also stated his clients are innocent of all charges.”

“Overseeing the trial is Judge Jean McAuliffe, from the Southern District, Appellate Court. Babylon’s lead Prosecutor is Sir Jordan Devon, who normally practices in England and holds a legal license in the State of New York. The defendant’s lawyer, Mark Armstrong, is from Chicago. In Babylon, these two high power attorneys are going to face off against each other.”

“Judge Jean McAuliffe has made it clear American jurisprudence is going to determine the case. If you wish to look up the legal brief, you can find the details under Am. Jur. 2d. We expect jury selection to take two days.”

“In other news, the mass evacuation of cities and towns around the Great Lakes is occurring as we speak. Many recall Detroit was a designated settlement place for the refugee exchange with Israel. There are one million Muslims living there. President Cain authorized evacuations, using Air Force planes and commercial jets. The primary areas they are being sent to are southern states like Texas and New Mexico.”

“We expect Wormwood to impact Lake Michigan in 36-hours.”

“In the United States, numerous gangs have taken over many cities and towns. The National Guard controls distribution of provisions and water in 35 states. Unfortunately, lawlessness has overrun numerous areas as people scramble for food and other necessary items. Access to nutrition and medicine has stopped in many areas. The shortages primarily occurred because gangs hijacked the supplies as the federal government delivered them to the states. To combat this, authorities have instructed National Guard Units to shoot to kill. Therefore, when a person is approaching a state defense force, approach with your hands held high above your head. Failure to comply may cause death.”

“Border States crossings are in reverse, with many crossing the border going into Mexico. Mexico has not sustained the damage the United States has in recent years.”

“A group of governors are meeting in Kansas City, Missouri, a city still intact. Their agenda is to produce solutions to take back the cities from the gangs. With Wormwood impacting Lake Michigan in a few days; many feel the Governors are wasting their time until they can assess the damage from Wormwood.”

“Food production worldwide for this year’s harvest is 30 percent less than that of previous years. The volcanos, coupled with the Noelani Asteroid, have blocked much of the sun, and ash covered fields have yet to be cleared. South of the United States border and in South America, large farms are producing food. Still, their output falls short of feeding the world. The cattle business worldwide is down 80 percent. Purchasing food can be pricy. However, let us remind you, without the chip, you cannot buy it.”

“Steak per pound is up to 100 credits or what was $200 in phased out American money. Most cannot afford it.”

“The world governments are distributing food for urgent situations. Most of the food consists of MREs. You can find distribution points in most major cities for the emergency food. We understand they distribute twice a day to residents.”

“Regarding water, the government is suggesting worldwide to bottle as much as you can. Do not use the fresh water you have saved for anything but drinking. Canned water will be available approximately three days after Wormwood impacts the United States and other parts of our world.”

“We shall continue our broadcast after these messages.”

### Chapter 74

##### Albert Meers Farm

##### Salina, Kansas

##### Gangsters and Death

A

l had sat up a deer stand closer to the highway. This makeshift pre-warning system was staffed 24 Hours a day. Al, his son and Doc took 8-hour shifts watching for trouble. They kept two rifles, ammunition, a walkie talkie, and field glasses in the stand. Fortunately, they had seen no unwelcome visitors. The news broadcasts they received over shortwave radio said criminal organizations had taken over most of Salina. It was only a matter of time before organized crime branched out to rural areas. Wormwood would be impacting Lake Michigan, so every container they could find was filled with fresh water. They prayed that their well would remain uncontaminated. They got their water from the Great Plains Aquifer, which served central Kansas since the pioneer days.

A diesel engine in the distance interrupted Al's thoughts. His watch showed 6:00 a.m. The last time they heard one of these was when their Farm Bureau representative, Jim Reeves, came to visit using a government-provided snowplow. They had not seen him since.

Al looked through a pair of field glasses at both sides of the highway. Then he saw a state truck coming from the east. The plow was down, pushing ash off the road. He was hoping it was Jim. Al turned on the walkie talkie, then clicked it three times and waited till he got three clicks back. Exiting the blind, Al made his way up the long gravel driveway to the farmhouse.

Once he arrived, his son and Doc were waiting for him on the porch. Al told them they could potentially have unwanted visitors, but he wasn't sure.

“It could be Jim in the same truck he drove last time.”

“Are you certain?” Doc asked.

“No, I am not sure. I just spotted the vehicle. We will soon find out.”

The three of them went upstairs to the attic. Up there, they had access to the dormers overlooking the entrance of the house. Through the glass windows, they saw the truck slow down, then turn into the driveway. Looking with binoculars, Al spotted three unfamiliar men. All the trio are sitting in the front seat of the truck. He then noticed two other individuals huddled in the truck's bed. He could only see the top of their heads. Al decided to act and relayed his plan to Doc and Roy.

“I will head down to welcome them. You and Roy, keep aiming at the individuals in the truck in front and the truck bed. If you see me take my hat off, shoot them.”

“Whatever you say,” Doc answered.

Al made his way downstairs and out the front door. He had his rifle clutched using both hands.

The plow truck stopped at the front as the driver and another man stepped from the vehicle. One man was of Hispanic heritage, the other Caucasian. The Mexican man spoke first.

“Hi there, sir. I am Mario Vazquez,” he stated, smiling from ear to ear. “The person standing beside me is my friend Joel. We are out here checking with local farmers around here who may have any extra food to sell.”

“I'm curious,” Al said a bit sarcastically. “can you identify the individuals in the truck's bed?”

“There is no one back there,” he said in all seriousness, his face still adorned with a smile, but his tone serious.

“Yes, I can assure you that there are at least a couple present. You have lied to me once, and that is all it takes. It's time for you and your friends to depart from our farm.”

“Hey, mister, we have two choices: the simple option or the challenging option. I know only you and your immediate family are here to protect your property. I cannot believe over a little food; you would risk their lives.”

At that moment, the two individuals in the bed of the truck swiftly ascended to the roof of the cab, armed with M-16 rifles. As Al looked at the shooters aimed at him, he mustered up the courage to confront their leader.

“I will ask you to leave again. We do not want any trouble.”

Their leader, with a stern expression, decided to face Al and present him with an ultimatum.

“You have ten seconds to put down that rifle, sir, or my men on top of the cab will spray you with bullets.”

Ignoring the man's words, Al knew it was time to act. Hopefully, Roy and Doc were up to it.

“It’s boiling out here,” Al said as he took his hat off.

Two shots were swiftly discharged from the dormers without any delay. Both of them scored accurate hits on their targets. Acting swiftly and decisively, Doc and Roy killed the two assailants, who were menacing Al with guns, perched atop the cab of the truck.

As Mario looked up at his friends, Al aimed his rifle at him. He turned to Al, pulling a revolver from his jacket. As Al pulled the trigger, his shot found its mark and entered the man's forehead, resulting in his immediate demise. When the truck door swung open, Al quickly took cover behind the rails of the porch, while the man who had been seated in the middle unleashed a hail of bullets from his deadly weapon. With a crouched posture, Joel had positioned himself alongside the truck's fender after his partner had been shot. From upstairs, Al could hear the sound of a volley of shots being fired. The man fell back from the fender of the truck onto the ground having suffered a severe and life-threatening injury that left him in a critical condition. Al noticed the last man who had shot at him crouched behind the truck door. Finally, the man dropped his weapon and cautiously emerged from his hiding spot. He raised his hands in surrender, palms facing forward.

“No more, sir,” he pleaded, his voice trembling with desperation.

Al expressed his doubts about the situation, his tone filled with uncertainty, as he raised his rifle to his shoulder and peered down the sight at the man who had his arms raised.

“Sir, I highly question that assertion. As I stood on the porch, you unleashed a relentless stream of bullets in my direction. Look closely and you'll spot the bullet holes scattered across my house. You are a ruthless murderer. You have no qualms about appropriating what doesn't belong to you, resorting to any means necessary. Today, my forgiveness is not the road you will take. May god have mercy on you.”

After a period of deep thought, Al made a resolute decision, his grip on the weapon tightening. Deliberately, he wrapped his finger around the trigger and proceeded to squeeze it. This individual's life came to a tragic end when a bullet pierced through his skull, leading to fatal consequences. Al pulled the weapon down feeling disgust with both himself and the actions of these killers. With a booming voice, Al called out to everyone, demanding that they exit the house. The first ones to come out were Roy and Doc, and they were soon joined by their families, including the children.

“Albert, he surrendered,” Linda exclaimed! “Why did you kill him?”

“The potential consequence of choosing to release him is that we will almost certainly be targeted for attacks by others. After careful thought, I made up my mind. The elimination of these men is of utmost importance and cannot be overlooked. In the event that any of them manage to return to their place of origin, they will undoubtedly mobilize an entire army to come back here. It was completely essential for me to prevent that from occurring. We will take the needed steps to hide their truck and ensure that they receive a proper burial.”

The tears began flowing for Linda, and the same happened to Doc's daughter. Al put the rifle down, as Roy and Doc checked each body to make sure they were dead. Curiosity driving him, Roy scaled the truck and thoroughly examined the contents of its bed. When he climbed down, he opened the driver's door, climbed in, and started the engine. He rolled down the window.

“Since the truck bed is filled with a variety of items, it's best to keep a safe distance. I am going to dump it.”

With the flick of a switch, Roy engaged the hydraulics and proceeded to tilt the bed. Among the items that spilled out of the truck container were boxes and boxes of supplies, in addition to the bodies of the two shooters. Doc joined the others to examine the contents.

“They have been busy today,” Doc said.

Everyone assisted in searching through the boxes and bags of stolen stuff. Al noticed a lone box had jewelry in it. He opened the box, and among the items was a watch. The wristwatch is a silver Rolex, it has blood on it. Al knew who this belonged to. The watch has an engraving on its back. It belonged to an individual among their neighbors, three miles down the road, Julius Stabler. Since the watch had dried blood stains, he assumed someone took it after they killed him and his family. He felt justified in killing the intruders. He turned toward his loved ones.

“Take the supplies from the truck and place them in the barn. Hide the vehicle behind our barn. I don't want it visible from the highway. I doubt we will see a reconnaissance team coming to get it.”

Among the five men that he helped kill, there was one who had surrendered, making his involvement in this act particularly troubling. He thought to himself, ‘have I become a savage too?’ He silently asked God, ‘What will we evolve into? Animals?’

### Chapter 75

##### NASA HQ

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Wormwood Impact

N

ASA stationed over a hundred cameras in impact cities expected to have severe damage. They were diligently monitoring the live feed from thirty monitors, each displaying a different set of images, all arranged in a circle around the room. Radar carefully tracked Wormwood's every movement. Everyone in the chamber fell silent as each person watched, helpless, as the inevitable consequences played out before them.

“Alice,” Tom commented, “Wormwood is entering the atmosphere. Our calculations match those of Enoch. How he knows these coordinates without even a slide rule, I can't comprehend.”

Ignoring his comment Alcie turned back the task at hand.

“The cams we set up in Detroit and Chicago, Tom, will likely be quickly destroyed, leaving our team with no surveillance. Hopefully, whenever the video becomes available, we can get a sense of Wormwood's impact through the visuals. With the release of gasses and the presence of debris in the atmosphere, the scene resembles a blazing fireball approaching us.”

“Impact, 30 seconds and counting,” a tech said from his monitoring screen.

They all shifted their gaze towards the web cam monitors, their eyes fixated on the screens. Cams in Chicago were the first to record The Comet, capturing its mesmerizing streak across the night sky. What they witnessed was a colossal wave of water obliterating the cameras perched atop the Willis Tower, formerly known as the Sears Building. The enormous wave, towering over 1,500 feet, surged forward with an unimaginable velocity. This wasn't your typical tsunami; it was a relentless power surging forward at an unimaginable speed of 500 mph, or perhaps as high as 2,500 mph. It tore through everything in its wake, leaving destruction in its path. In a matter of seconds, the cams ceased their broadcast, leaving nothing but a brief glimpse. They then witnessed the brutal destruction of the cameras from Cleveland, Milwaukee, Green Bay, and Detroit as a massive wave crashed upon them from the neighboring lakes. In order to monitor ground movement, they had strategically placed sensors in the same areas. The ground shook violently as they registered a seismic event equivalent to a magnitude 9 plus earthquake on the Richter Scale. It was clear that the Comet had collided with the bedrock beneath Lake Michigan. The shock waves of ground movement reverberated through the entire upper and middle Midwest area, causing buildings to sway and windows to shatter. As the Meridian Fault near Missouri started shaking, their worst-case scenario unfolded before their eyes. Near St. Louis, the fault led to buildings crumbling and the ground splitting.”

“Dr. Schmidt,” Alice asked, “what’s your early assessment concerning damage?”

“Not a single building could have withstood that wall of water. Everything and anyone there are gone.”

The NASA team leaned back in their chairs, the room filled with a hushed silence as they waited for the results. Without satellites, they were left without the ability to gauge the size of the plume and the extent of the destruction. Rising higher and higher, it could have extended beyond an impressive 50-mile mark. They could sense the imminent devastation as Wormwood unleashed its fury upon the world.

The

Fourth Trumpet



### Chapter 76

##### THE Network, Brad Williams Reporting

##### Babylon, Iraq

##### Wormwood, The Aftermath

T

he announcer ended his intro as Brad started talking. “Good evening world, I am Brad Williams, Anchor for THE Network News broadcasting from our Babylon Studios. We will be reporting tonight with my co-anchors, Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan.”

“This is the third day since Wormwood impacted the Great Lakes area. We have drone footage of the destruction from what was Chicago. We have several updates from the comet's impact. Catherine has the story.”

The camera zoomed in on Catherine as the display split. Technicians displayed a graphic depiction of the Midwest on the screen as she started.

“You can see on your screen a map of the upper Midwest showing the waterways as they exist at present. The impact of Wormwoods was centered in Lake Michigan, near Chicago. This set off a chain of events, including the Meriden Earthquake. Our graphic overlay you are seeing represents the Great Lakes and major waterways. The Illinois waterway, which flows into the Mississippi, is now an immense lake. It extends from what was Chicago, south to the city of St. Louis. Waterway flooding caused destruction from Chicago to New Orleans. Backwash has poisoned the Missouri River, which flows into the Mississippi near St. Louis from the earthquake and Wormwood.”

“The same poisoning of waterways includes the Ohio and other small rivers. The contamination of the waters caused by the impurities released by the comet, dead marine life, sewage and chemicals from the industrialized Midwest.”

“Our next graphic shows the destruction of cities destroyed by the impact. As you can see, it stretches all the way to the New York state line in the east, Nebraska in the Midwest, Canada to the north, and St. Louis to the south. The aftermath of Wormwood has left a muddy swamp. It contains rotting fish, animals, along with decomposing humans. Anyone trapped here truly has little chance of survival.”

“This new graphic shows the gas and water vapor cloud caused by Wormwood. The atmospheric phenomenon is now moving from west to east around the world, causing torrential rainfall. Tests after these rainfalls show the local water supplies are not safe for consumption, so DO NOT drink this liquid. Filtering or boiling will not help. If you can distill it, then it may be consumable. Back to you, Brad.”

“Thanks Catherine. As you can see, these extraterrestrial terrorists Enoch and Elijah, with their band of outlaws, are killing everyone and everything on earth who do not believe in them or their destructive alien god.”

“We have drone footage of worldwide riots over food and medical shortages. You can see from our video what was New York City, thousands of people demonstrating near a National Army Guard Unit. Once the mob breached the fences, the guard, in self-defense, started shooting live bullets at them. When the agitators were finally dispersed, nearly 1,000 people were killed or injured.”

“Similar events occurred within cities, across the United States. In England, Germany, France, Italy, and Spain, similar protests took place. South Africa, South America are also having difficulty containing rioting citizens seeking food.”

Brad turned away from the camera, his gaze fixated on Nancy.

“People's hunger drives them to extreme measures for food.”

“Yes Brad, you are correct. We now know relief provisions are being brought into the cities. Sadly, there's not enough for everyone. We hear many of the resources are being hijacked, then hoarded by criminal gangs. These syndicates are controlling several cities. The National Guard is overwhelmed, trying to keep peace.”

“I am sure they are, Nancy. Seeing New York suffering such a catastrophic situation is difficult to digest. We are aware efforts are being taken to solve the issues of food distribution. It might just take time.”

“In other news, the trial of the two captured terrorists from Eden II is scheduled to resume tomorrow. They completed jury selection today. We will be right back.”

### Chapter 77

##### Courtroom

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### The Trial

J

ohn sent Enil and Tahit to Babylon per Enoch’s Instructions. He ensured they were safe. They will broadcast the trial and handle commentary. They awarded THE Network as the primary feed. The networks agreed with Eden II to use only one cable channel each. THE Network was using theirs, and Eden II is using the old Bear frequency and channel. Oddsmakers were making bets on which network would get the highest ratings. With Enil in Babylon, Mathews took over his responsibilities.

“John, the trial is going to start within five minutes.”

“We are ready Matthews. Are you sure they can’t track where we are broadcasting from?”

“Absolutely. Enil and I have everything under control. They will try, we are sure. In the unlikely event they get into our system, we will shut down immediately.”

“The responsibility will rest in your capable hands, thanks Matthews.”

As the countdown clock hit zero, they took their seats at the anchor desk, ready for the show to begin.

“Welcome to Eden II News, with your hosts John Roddenburg and Mary Ann his co-anchor.”

“Good morning world. I am John Roddenberg along with my co-anchor Mary Ann. We are broadcasting the legal proceedings of the Reverend Thomas Marks and my co-anchor, Geraldo Vasquez, from New Babylon. The trial starts at 9:00 in the morning, Babylon time or 1:00 a.m. Central Standard Time. I know millions are up and watching this trial. On site, live in the courtroom, we have Tahit, our correspondent. Tahit.”

“Hello John. I am here broadcasting from New Babylon, in a makeshift courtroom, set up by the Ten to hold the proceedings. From THE Network's video feed, you can see that the Reverend Marks and Geraldo Vasquez have already taken their seats at the defense table. Their attorney, Mark Armstrong, is with them. On the other side, Sir Jordan Devon of England is the sole attorney representing the prosecution.”

“Tahit, have you received a witness list?”

“Just before we started broadcasting, we were handed a list. It appears a few of the individuals with knowledge are from Mark Armstrong’s Chicago office, and other persons from Bear News.”

“What witnesses are for the defense?”

“Same types of witnesses. Among their members, there are a handful of Christians who were acquainted with Geraldo and Marks. A few believers who personally knew the defendants were flown into New Babylon from America to support their defense. We're about to begin, John. I have to go. The Honorable Jean McAuliffe is entering the courtroom. Let us tune in to the sounds of the proceedings.”

“All rise,” the Bailiff said.

The courtroom fell silent as Judge Jean McAuliffe made her entrance, her authoritative presence commanding the attention of everyone present. Taking her seat, she glanced across the bench, carefully observing the participants before addressing them.

“This is the trial of The Alliance of Ten vs The Reverend Thomas Eugene Marks and Geraldo Anita Vasquez. Before we begin opening statements, let me remind everyone that this trial is being conducted under the principles of American jurisprudence. I, in my capacity as the Judge, will give my full attention to any statements that fall outside the boundaries of these rules. Sir Devon Jordan, are you prepared to deliver your opening statement?”

“Yes, Your Honor, I am,” he said, his voice steady and unwavering.

“You may address the jury,” the judge said, her voice echoing through the courtroom.

“Thank you,” Jordan said, addressing the honorable judge.

As Sir Jordan left the prosecutor's table, he strode confidently towards the front of the jury box, his presence commanding the attention of everyone in the room.

“Members of the jury. We have carefully selected each of you esteemed participants from the peers of both Reverend Marks and Geraldo Vasquez. I expect you to render a verdict that aligns with your strong beliefs about their guilt or innocence. Over the course of the next few hours or days, I will present evidence that proves the defendants' willingness and intentional actions in aiding the mass killing of millions of people. Deaths spread across the globe, transcending borders and impacting every corner of the world. The punishment we are seeking for each of them is the death penalty. They became implicated in these crimes by connecting themselves to Enoch and Elijah, the alien terrorists commonly referred to as the Witnesses.”

Mark Armstrong stood from his table, the sound of his chair scraping against the floor echoed in the room.

“Objection, Your Honor,” the defense attorney interjected, “Enoch and Elijah are not the ones being accused here.”

“Mr. Armstrong, it is uncommon to hear objections during opening statements. It is surprising to me that you are objecting.”

“Your Honor, as the defense attorney for the accused, I must object and emphasize that neither Enoch nor Elijah are relevant to this trial. The evidence the government has at its disposal focuses primarily on the actions of Enoch and Elijah, providing crucial insights. My clients have no involvement whatsoever in their supposed deeds. I need this to be halted right away, not delayed.”

“Sir Devon Jordan, Mr. Armstrong is correct. Elijah and Enoch are not on trial. The objection is sustained. Without mentioning the purported misdeeds of Enoch and Elijah, please provide a clearer explanation of your intent.”

Inside Eden II's studios, John smirked to himself, thinking, 'one point for our side.’

Sir Jordan, feeling a bit perturbed at being chastised, responded to the court with a firm tone in his voice.

“Your ruling, Your Honor, is something I vehemently object to. It is an undeniable truth that these Witnesses have caused the deaths of millions, and now their actions have impacted billions. Unquestionably, these impeccably dressed men, who carry an air of authority, are surely their associates. With cold and calculated intent, these defendants have orchestrated a plan to inflict unimaginable suffering upon humanity.”

“Once again, Sir Jordan,” the Judge sternly emphasized, “Enoch and Elijah's presence is irrelevant to this trial. You must substantiate any potential crimes committed by these two defendants with evidence that proves their direct involvement, as specified in your criminal complaint.”

“In light of your ruling, Your Honor, I kindly request a recess,” stated Jordan.

“I am willing to grant your recess. Court is scheduled to resume in 30 minutes.”

The Judge left the courtroom. Sir Jordan discreetly slipped out through the rear doors, leaving behind a hushed silence. Mark and his accused huddled together at the defendants' table, whispering in hushed tones. Tahit came back onto Eden IIs monitors.

“John, can you hear me?”

“Yes Tahit,” they replied, their voices carrying a tone of acknowledgement.

“As you just saw, an objection interrupted Sir Jordan’s opening statement, sustained by the Judge.”

“What do you think, Tahit? What is Sir Jordan contemplating that he asked for a recess?”

“I don’t know John. I would assume he is rethinking his opening statement to the jury. The direction he seemed to have been moving toward, based on the court's decision, will not be allowed.”

“I agree Tahit. Jordan seemed put out by the Judge’s ruling.”

“He certainly was. Sir Jordan’s body and facial language showed his frustration. He appeared angry.”

“From the video feed, he seemed terribly upset. Anger resonated in his voice too.”

“Court will reconvene here in close to a half an hour. We will sign off until then.”

“We will be here, Tahit. Let us know when the trial resumes.”

The screen split, with one half displaying a clear view of the courtroom and the other featuring a focused image of John. He turned towards the cameras, his face filled with a mix of excitement and nervousness.

“It appears the Alliance has suffered a setback. Don't go anywhere because we will be back soon, so stay tuned.”

### Chapter 78

##### Courtroom

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### The Trial Part II

J

ohn and Mary Ann were looking at their monitor of the courtroom from Babylon. There had been a 30-minute recess. The monitor displayed Sir Jordan entering the building with a couple of other people they did not know, as he took his place at the prosecutor's table. Tahit's voice came over their earpieces.

“John, the Judge is returning.”

The Bailiff stood and brought the entire court to order.

“All rise, The Honorable Jean McAuliffe is entering the courtroom.”

The Judge entered and sat as she addressed Sir Jordan.

“Shall we continue, Sir Jordan?” the Judge inquired, waiting for his response.

“I am ready, your honor,” Jordan stated firmly, addressing the judge.

“Then proceed,” she said, her voice filled with authority.

Sir Jordan confidently stood up from his seat and made his way towards the jury box.

“Picture a gangster, flanked by their trusty companions, executing a daring criminal endeavor. According to American laws, it is imperative to find those individuals guilty. There's no need for his friends to physically engage by pulling the trigger or breaking the lock. If they were present at the scene of the crime, their association implicates them as culpable. In Reverend Marks and Geraldo Vasquez's case, our intention is to demonstrate their conspiracy to dismantle the United States government and incite disobedience towards our laws.”

“For example, when it comes to the chipping of the masses, one of the main goals is to eradicate crime and drug use. Both defendants were spreading lies from Eden II's phantom broadcast station, their voices echoing warnings about the chip being ‘The Mark of the Devil,’ urging people not to consent. They emphasized the importance of individuals firmly resisting any attempts to accept the implant. This dire situation left parts of the community hungry and desperate, as they were unable to find any form of aid, for they were not in compliance with the Alliances laws.”

“On their broadcasts, they were boldly proclaiming these falsehoods. We have a video to enter into evidence to prove the defendants both stated; it was better to die instead of taking the chip, or as they call it, The Mark of the Beast.”

“They have frequently described the world's government as diabolical. Their reliance on the Bible, a book considered outdated, has been consistently debunked as a myth. By using illegal broadcasts as a medium, they have managed to convey their messages to the world, inciting dissent and causing a significant loss of life.”

“We'll soon prove, with eyewitness accounts and recorded footage, that these men undermine governments across the globe. They are terrorists, spreading fear and chaos wherever they go. Therefore, you must render a verdict of guilty. Thank you.”

Sir Jordan returned to the prosecutor's table and sank into the chair.

The Judge's gaze shifted towards Mark, her eyes fixed on him, waiting in anticipation for his opening statements.

“Mr. Armstrong, the floor is yours. Please proceed with your opening statement.”

Mark confidently stood up and made his way towards the jury, ready to present his initial position.

“It is probable that you are familiar with the voices of Reverend Marks and Geraldo Vasquez as they speak from Eden II. As a reporter, Geraldo is always chasing leads and seeking the truth. He gathers information and shares it with the masses, ensuring they are informed. Occasionally, he brings attention to instances where someone has made a mistake or behaved inappropriately. There are times when he voices his opinion on the matter. The prosecution's case only serves to reinforce the notion that this trial could be utilized as a tool to silence the free press. Geraldo's reports from Eden II was devoid of any embellishments, presenting only the objective facts. This occurred today, that happened today. In his view, he may have remarked that what he was witnessing and reporting on was a violation of ethics. Perhaps Geraldo got hold of some documents, which he proceeded to disclose on his broadcast. Geraldo's coverage or information is perfectly legitimate within the legal framework of the United States. A reporter's accuracy can range from being completely wrong to existing in a gray area. We continue to perceive his or her actions as being in accordance with the law.”

“Reverend Marks, a Christian preacher, is known for his passionate sermons. When Thomas speaks, his words resonate with deep sincerity as he imparts the teachings of the Bible. The Reverend, under the protection of religious freedom, has the right to express his views without constraint. Unless he resorts to threatening someone's life, his actions remain within the boundaries of the law. There is no law that prohibits a preacher from expressing their interpretation of the Bible. As part of his position, he divulges interpretations, presenting unique perspectives.”

“Subversion is the intentional effort to weaken or disturb established systems or structures, often through covert means. As we proceed, don't forget to keep this definition in the back of your mind. Marks firmly believes in the teachings of the Bible. For instance, the Bible chronicles the recent worldwide disasters, long before they occurred, 2,000 years before they became a reality. Acting as a reporter, Reverend Marks reported these disasters with a sense of urgency. He warned people about the upcoming calamities, urging them to take precautions. I am referring to volcanoes, the asteroid, and the comet. Through his interpretation of the news on the air, he guided people to safety, allowing them to escape harm. You know what? I just had an important realization that I must urgently share with you. He was right, as the prophecies from the Bible that Mark lives by and testifies to daily from Eden II, indeed came true.”

“Furthermore, individuals are free to voice their dissent without fear of breaking any laws. These men have never resorted to using guns, bombs, poisons, or any other means to harm others or damage property. Their sole focus is delivering factual news. This trial is a farce, a carefully orchestrated scheme meant to intimidate those who dare to oppose the Ten Alliance. Despite the prosecution's allegations, there was no evidence of any crime being committed. I anticipate you will agree, and ultimately deliver a verdict of not guilty.”

Mark returned to the defendants' table, as the Judge instructed the court.

“We are going to take a break for lunch. When we return, you may call your first witness, Sir Jordan.”

The Judge stood and left the courtroom.

Tahit came back on.

“The introductory statements were short, John. I think from watching the Jury, they believed Armstrong, more than Jordan.”

“I agree Tahit. The jury appeared to not be happy with the government's initial presentation.

“The video feed is being paused. We will be back after lunch. This is Tahit reporting from Babylon, Iraq, signing off.”

### Chapter 79

##### Conference Room Lunch

##### Nebuchadnezzar II Tower

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Division

W

hen Sir Jordan Devon walked into the conference room, he saw Cain’s anger and prepared himself for the onslaught.

“Do you have any idea what you are doing? You repeat the same pattern of losing to the Council every time. This Armstrong guy cleaned your clock and ate your lunch.”

“Shut up Cain. I am not in the mood for your tirades.”

“Absolutely Beelzebub, absolutely.”

“Cain, I have told you repeatedly to stop calling me names. Do you understand me?”

“Yes, father,” Cain chuckled. He enjoyed getting under Lucifer’s skin.

Jamal, seeing the warning signs, inserted himself.

“Based on what I've observed, it appears that the judge you agreed to use has a clear bias towards their side.”

“Maybe, Jamal,” Sir Jordan replied with a hint of uncertainty in his voice. “However, her point is completely valid and cannot be disputed. The entire world's eyes are fixed upon us. It's important that we avoid any resemblance to a biased or unjust tribunal. This will strain our relationship with our allies.”

“I don't believe you will win your case against them,” Cain retorted, his voice filled with skepticism.

“Cain do not think that it is over. This trial has only just begun. At this moment, my immediate task is to gather and organize my questions for the witnesses, who will be testifying during the afternoon session. I would appreciate it if you could eat your lunch, drink your booze, and then let me have some peace and quiet.”

Jordan's words immediately silenced the room. They understood it will be wisest to leave it alone and not disturb its current position.

### Chapter 80

##### Courtroom

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### The Trial Part III

T

ahit came back on-line and began reporting from the courtroom.

“The afternoon session is about to begin. However, we heard Mark Armstrong has a motion to dismiss. We received notification that the jury will not be brought in, so the Judge can hear the defenses motion in open court. She’s coming in, John.”

“All rise,” the bailiff announced.

The Honorable Jean McAuliffe entered the courtroom and sat in her chair. With a concerned expression on her face, she gazed out at the courtroom and proceeded to address both attorneys.

“I have not called in the jury. We understand, Mr. Armstrong, you have a written motion for the court to consider?”

“Yes, Your Honor, I have a plea to dismiss. May I approach the bench?”

“Yes, you may, and Sir Jordan, you may come forward to the bench.”

Armstrong handed the motion to the Judge and a copy to Sir Jordan. After the Judge read the brief, she looked at Mark, then Jordan, as she rendered her decision.

“I will allow you to present your motion in open court without the jury. Next, I will allow you, Sir Jordan to rebut it. Agreed?”

Armstrong and Sir Jordan both accepted her terms. Sir Jordan returned to his seat as Counselor Armstrong began his argument.

“Your Honor, during the opening statement of the government's case, Sir Jordan Devon explicitly mentioned that both defendants were involved in actions aimed at undermining the government. The case of Near v. Minnesota, 283 United States 697 (1931), revolved around the central issue of the press making accusations against local government officials, alleging their connections with gangsters. The State of Minnesota put forth the argument that the press should not be allowed to accuse government officials of crimes or even suggest that they may have committed them.”

“In a decision that surprised many, the Supreme Court ruled against the State of Minnesota. The case I'm referring to is a significant decision made by the United States Supreme Court. This ruling is considered a landmark decision because the court recognized that imposing prior restraints on publications is a clear infringement on the constitutional right to Freedom of the Press, as outlined in the First Amendment. In subsequent jurisprudence, there is a principle that is generally applied to free speech.”

“This government’s case is solely based on both my clients accusing the government of committing crimes. They also accused the governments of the globe, or the Ten Alliance, are co-conspirators in an international attempt to control our world. Your Honor, the United States Constitution is governing this trial. The coalition has yet to adopt a set of laws and is bound by the terms of American justice.”

“Based on this, you must dismiss the case under Freedom of the Press past rulings. I have seven other cases covering the same issues, such as the Pentagon Papers. I can present these examples and the Supreme Court decisions for each situation, affirming the cause in favor of the press.”

“Rebuttal, Sir Jordan?” The Judge asked.

“I disagree with counsel. This trial is not about these men reporting news and opinions, but… working together with those in Eden II to overthrow the U.S. government.”

“Anything else?”

“No, Your Honor.”

“Sir Jordan, can you present any witnesses that can tell the court these men used any direct methods to commit a killing? Any witnesses who can say these individuals utilized a weapon, planned a murder, or blew up a government building, or anything else related to a vicious crime.”

“No, Your Honor. They employed words and conspiracies to cause dissent in the world. Their discord has resulted in the deaths of millions of lives worldwide. They took part with others at Eden II causing these so-called fatal incidents, resulting in many fatalities worldwide.”

“Counselor, besides reporting the news of the events that occurred or are about to occur, what specific actions did the defendants take to contribute to these tragic incidents? Were these calamities caused by each person individually? It is quite perplexing to me how a reporter could have any influence on causing a volcano to erupt.”

“Your Honor, they colluded and developed a plan to call upon the extraterrestrial beings they serve, with the intention of deliberately provoking a cataclysmic disruption of nature. Just like the flood, there have been instances in the past where similar things have been accomplished.”

“Counselor, I want to clarify that these aliens or Witnesses are not being put on trial, as I have already ruled. If you wish to try them, you may do so. Before proceeding to the trial, it is necessary to first arrest them and ensure their presence in court. The court proceedings today remain unaffected by the actions of those individuals.”

Following a heated verbal debate with Sir Jordan Devon, Judge Jean McAuliffe appeared visibly stressed as she focused her gaze on Armstrong's motion and proceeded to read it once more. She took more than ten minutes to finish reading the motion. As she lifted her head, the anguish she was feeling became visible to everyone around her. The coexistence of the law and fear was a defining characteristic. She found herself in a difficult position, as she was wrestling with both options. Finally, she mustered the courage to speak, and when she did, her words were clear and concise.

“The Alliance, according to the United States Constitution, lacks the ability to establish independently the guilt of these individuals in terms of committing murder or causing any building explosions. There are no plans that can be proven, they interfered with nature to cause these catastrophes. The defendants are presenting the news based on their own observations and understanding of the events. In the Reverend's case, he is employing ancient writings as a means to make accusations against the government for their alleged misdeeds. Once again, his role is limited to reporting the news without any personal bias or opinions.”

“I cannot, with a clear conscience, permit the continuation of this trial. Based on the lack of tangible evidence presented and in accordance with previous Supreme Court rulings that have dismissed similar alleged crimes, I will rule to dismiss this case.”

“Reverend Marks and Geraldo Vazquez, you are free to go.”

The room erupted in applause. Both Marks and Geraldo showed their affection by hugging Mark.

Sir Jordan Devon's face began to transform, revealing his true identity. For a brief moment, his strong features contorted and disfigured him, resembling those of a demon. With an unexpected surge of energy coursing through his body, he finally managed to raise his head and release a resounding shout that sent shivers down the spines of everyone present, causing some to cower in fear upon hearing his menacing threat.

“Someday,” he exclaimed with a chilling tone, storming out of the room, “I will make sure to end the lives of every single one of you.”

Tahit returned after Jordan's outburst.

“They are cutting off the broadcast John, I have to go.”

### Chapter 81

##### Homecoming, Great Room

##### Eden II

##### Daniel Webster

E

veryone associated with Eden II was waiting in the great room and down the attached hallways. Enil was arriving with Mark Armstrong, Reverend Marks, and Geraldo. The celebration featured wine, cake, and food. With a slight creaking sound, the inner door swung open. As the group entered, Enoch took charge and began clapping. The sound of applause was resounding as everyone joined in enthusiastically. As soon as they entered the room, John positioned himself directly in front of Mark Armstrong with the intention of capturing everyone's attention.

“Listen everyone, I have something to share. Fill everyone's glass with fine wine before I tell you!”

The servants, as well as all those who were associated with Eden II, took it upon themselves to fill their cups and glasses with wine. With a big smile on his face, John raised his cup in the air and let out a loud shout.

“I would like to suggest that we raise our glasses in a toast to our very own Daniel Webster. In the book “Devil and Daniel Webster,” the author recounts the story of how Mark Armstrong triumphed over the devil!

The sound of cheers filled the air, creating an atmosphere of joy and celebration, as they enthusiastically marked their friends' long-awaited return.

### Chapter 82

##### Cain’s Personal Residence

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Demon Anger

C

ain was all in as he confronted his father and the failure today in the courtroom. “Well Sir Jordan Devon, Lucifer, Satan, and Beelzebub, Enoch tricked you, didn’t he? As always, you lost your temper. Your face transformed into the demon that you truly are, and everyone saw it.”

“Cain, aside from the matter we just discussed, we have other issues that need to be addressed. I have resolved the root cause of my unhappiness and have taken the necessary steps to address it. From this point forward, I am determined to ensure that no one will ever rule against me again. Specifically, we are referring to a judge who is human.”

“What have you done?” Cain asked.

“In approximately ten minutes,” he said, glancing at his watch, “the jet carrying the Judge, jurors, and witnesses will detonate in midair, leaving no evidence behind.”

“Revenge?” Cain asked with a gleeful tone, and a mischievous sparkle in his eyes.

“Yes, revenge.” His words lingered on his lips, filled with bitterness. “Advise THE Network that the crash was a result of the aircraft encountering an ash-cloud during flight. With that, this story reaches its conclusion. I promise you, this will be the final occasion when anyone, including yourself, dares to cross my path in this world!”

“She's innocent, as the jurors are,” Cain said, his voice dripping with contempt, as he tried to provoke him.

He liked chastising Jordan at every opportunity. However, this time, it was bad timing. With a sinking feeling in his gut after he spoke, Cain finally came face to face with the thing he dreaded the most. Sir Devon emerged, radiating an air of grandeur. His face twisted into a fearsome expression as he transformed into the serpent of Eden. With his head contorted like a snake about to strike, he unleashed his wrath upon Cain, his words hissing through the air.

“Keep your mouth shut, or I'll take matters into my own hands and ensure your demise,” he warned.

Cain's heart pounded in his chest as he stood, overwhelmed by fear and the realization that he had gone too far.

### Chapter 83

##### PM David Bernstein’s Office, Conference Room

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Concern In Israel

D

avid and his circle of advisors were joined by Elijah. The meeting was held to coordinate the opening of 'The Temple'. Unbeknownst to anyone else, David had other items to discuss with Elijah. Yona Salant, High Priest, Jacob Schwartz, Chief of the General Staff, Mark Lebowitz, Department of Antiquities, George Finkel, Director of National Construction Projects, Meyer Branlin, Director of Mossad, and Rabbi Cohen of The Temple Institute were present. David started the meeting.

“Elijah,” he asked, “has The Temple been completed?”

“Yes David, I am pleased to announce that 'God's Temple' is fully completed, with its majestic architecture and intricate carvings. Israel may restart its sacrifices for the first time since Rome destroyed ‘The Temple’ nearly 2,000 years ago. The sacrifice must meet one condition - it must involve invoking the name of Jesus.”

“Many still do not believe Elijah. They might not like this new rule.”

“Most do, David. There is an incredible amount of support in Israel, proclaiming Jesus is the Messiah. Those who disagree can abstain.”

“Elijah is right,” Yona said. “After witnessing the demonstration of God's power against Rabbi Benjamin Hagan, and the miraculous burning of the offering, most now acknowledge Jesus as the Messiah, including you.”

“Yona, you may be correct. I want no problems at 'The Temple'. With that said, Elijah, are you hosting a tour for television tomorrow?”

“Yes, I am,” he declared resolutely.

“I am pleased Elijah. Your broadcast will show Israel’s will, building God’s Temple. We completed it in record time. I would like to congratulate you, George, on doing an incredible job to help rebuild our ‘Temple’.”

“Thank you, David. The project for me personally is the fulfillment of a dream of mine.”

“Good, then we are set. ‘The Temple’ opens, the sacrifices resume, and Israel is close to as it was when God bestowed the land to us. Israel’s Twelve Tribes are accounted for, and Israel occupies 98 percent of the territory. Let me thank each of you for your help in accomplishing this feat.”

Everyone rose and exchanged congratulations amongst the group. David whispered into Elijah’s ear while everyone else was celebrating.

“Elijah, keep Yona, Jacob, and Meyer here. We have another issue to discuss.”

When everyone else left, David sat down in his chair, then leaned over toward Elijah.

“I need to ask you a few questions. Since accepting Christ, I have been reading the New Testament. Currently, I have covered most of Daniel's dreams. I have also studied Revelation, and other books which describe the challenging times we are now facing.”

David paused to consider what words to use. He wanted this to come out right.

“My concern, Elijah, is about the welfare of Israel. It appears after rebuilding our ‘Temple’ and expansion of our borders, we are to be defeated during a war. We will be occupied, and your 144,000 are to be executed. Is this correct?”

“Yes, David, everything you mentioned is God's will. Except a war after occupation and the executions. Some may perish, but not the entire 144,000. The Antichrist and the False Prophet will desecrate ‘The Temple’. However, his trespassing upon Israel will be short-lived. Jesus will come and vanquish global armies. Armageddon is coming in a few years.”

“Are we to retaliate, or let them seize control?”

“Give them the ability to establish a presence in Israel. Jesus, with Israel at his side, is poised to win the true battle that will unfold within the next four years”

“You won't be around, right, when the last war reaches our borders?”

“Yes David, I am going to be assassinated along with Enoch. Afterwards, the world will fall under the iron grip of the Antichrist.:

“We can cause them a lot of damage, even if they defeated us, Elijah,” Jacob Schwartz said. “Significant destruction.”

“Jacob, at the end of 'Man's Time,' a war is going to occur within the valley of Megiddo. Israel will battle alongside Jesus and His Angels. Soldiers on horseback, in tanks, armed with each and every weapon known to man, led by the Antichrist, will be assembled. Their purpose is to eradicate and kill every Jew in the world, then capture New Jerusalem from God. However, Jesus, with His ‘Army of Angels,’ is going to fight beside you and defeat the largest army ever assembled. Remember the words of Jesus to His disciples, In Matthew 26 verse 53.”

‘Do you think that I cannot now pray to My Father, and He will provide Me with more than twelve legions of Angels?’

“So, bide your time. Have faith in God’s plan and Jesus. Israel's worldly enemies will face their final defeat.”

“How many will attack us, Elijah?”

“Well over, two-hundred million.”

“That many against us? We as a nation only have thirty million, including women and children. That number of soldiers and armaments seem preposterous!”

“Their objective is to combat Jesus. The demons know the scriptures. They are aware that Jesus will return that day. Be strong in your faith. You'll be prepared when the moment to battle arrives.”

“Elijah, when do you expect to die?” David asked.

“Soon. God is going to allow the Antichrist to kill both me and Enoch, leaving our bodies lying in the street and leave soldiers to guard our bodies. After three-and-a-half-days, we are going to stand up from our death pose as Christ did, then ascend into Heaven.”

“When is this to occur?” Jacob asked. “Do you have an exact date?”

“As I stated earlier, and to further answer your question, Jacob, the end of my life is near.”

“Which Trumpet are we facing next?” David asked.

“Darkness is going to be the fourth one. Enoch is going to explain this woe on Eden II's network.”

“I suppose our government, when the occupation occurs, must go underground?” Meyer asked with a tinge of fear in his words.

“You're right, Meyer,” he admitted, giving him credit for being correct.

“I suppose we should prepare. Hide our military assets in the deserts and caves,” David stated.

“Indeed, David, a wise idea,” Elijah stated, knowing full well they must hide their military till the day of the Lord.

### Chapter 84

##### John Roddenburg Reporting

##### Eden II

##### The Fourth Trumpet

T

he announcer began; “People of the world, welcome to Eden II News, live with John Roddenburg from our Eden II Newsroom. Tonight, we are covering the Fourth Trumpet as described in Revelation. Here is your host, John Roddenburg.”

“Welcome, I am John Roddenburg. Tonight, we have Enoch with us to discuss the Fourth Trumpet. This Trumpet for ages has been problematic to comprehend what the verses truly mean. I will read the verse we are looking at tonight to you. Afterwards, we will let Enoch explain its meaning, and the consequences of this next woe upon the world.”

“In Revelation, verse 12, it exclaims,”

‘Then the fourth angel sounded his trumpet, and a third of the sun and moon and stars were struck. A third of the stars were darkened, a third of the day was without light, and a third of the night as well.’

“One would think by reading this verse, a third of the sun, moon and stars would disappear. The interpretation does not align with the verse's meaning. Enoch, please interpret this verse and how it will affect earth.”

The camera panned to Enoch.

“Thank you, John. And let me add, you are right. Over time, many have interpreted this verse several ways. At one time, many of these same persons stated our planet will speed up and rotate thirty percent faster. These theories are not correct. Any significant increase of the earth’s rotational speed would destroy every living thing: humanity, plants, animals, trees, and even the oceans. Our planet as God designed it, stays balanced within the universe and solar system. This theory is not possible.”

“Some interpret this verse by speculating that the sun, moon, and stars will all diminish in their brightness by a third. This concept is not correct, and it fails to capture the essence of the idea. These visions were bestowed upon John during his exile on the Island of Patmos, around 95 AD. These types of scenarios would have been completely unfamiliar to him. He vividly recounts the sights and sounds that captivated him. John realized that throughout both the daytime and nighttime, the vastness of the Heavens remained hidden from the naked eye. For one third of the day and night, there will be complete darkness, with no sunlight, moonlight, or starlight.”

“The correct interpretation states that for a duration of one full day, which encompasses four hours of daylight and four hours of night, the sun and stars will not be visible. As a result of the eruption of the volcanoes, the impact of the asteroid, and the arrival of the comet's which were the last three Trumpets, a mixture of ash, water vapor, and toxic gases has been formed in the earth's upper atmosphere. In order to better illustrate my point, I have created a chart with the help of Chester Nichols, Eden II's meteorologist.”

As Enoch explained the significance, the screen was split to accommodate the display of the chart.

“According to this visual representation, it is indicated that the Earth rotates at a speed of 1,609 kilometers per hour. To put the verse into a proper perspective, at any given time on earth stretching from west to east; 3,333 miles will lose visible sight of the sun, moon and stars.”

“From a scientific standpoint, the amalgamation of atmospheric matter resulting from the initial Three Trumpets is coalescing, giving rise to a condensed formation. This cloud will extend across the North and South Poles, spanning a width of 8,333 miles at its widest point at the equator. The density of the cloud will result in the obstruction of light on the earth as stated in Revelation. Every day, it will impact everyone, regardless of their location. The entire world will endure the consequences brought forth by this 'Trumpet'. This incident closely aligns with one plague mentioned in the Exodus narrative.”

‘Then the Lord said to Moses, Stretch out your hand toward the sky so that darkness spreads over Egypt—darkness that can be felt. So, Moses stretched out his hand toward the sky, and total darkness covered all Egypt for three days. No one could see anyone else or move about for three days. Yet all the Israelites had light in the places where they lived.’

“To clarify, consider the scenario where we initiate our journey in Los Angeles. The leading edge of the cloud I am referring to is currently encompassing the area as of 4:00 p.m. Pacific Standard Time. The City of Los Angeles will experience cloud cover for a duration of eight hours, or until 12:00 p.m. in New York, which is located 3,000 miles away. The vanguard is scheduled to arrive there at 7:30 p.m. The Pacific Standard Time, also known as 10:30 pm Eastern time. The movement of the cloud will persist as it traverses the entire globe.”

“This Trumpet possesses the capability to lower the earth's temperature. Once again, the cloud's density will impede the transmission of heat or ultraviolet rays to the earth. As the cloud moves across the region, it is going to persist for a duration of eight hours. To put it simply, let's say your thermometer indicates a temperature of seventy degrees prior to the arrival of the cloud. As the cloud passes, the temperature will drop to thirty-eight degrees.”

“The Northern Hemisphere is gradually transitioning out of the winter season. According to records, the mean temperature during this specific time in Chicago, Illinois is 45 degrees. As the cloud passes, the temperature is expected to decrease to 13 degrees Fahrenheit or -10 degrees Celsius. Once the cloud passes, temperatures will return to normal. “In the Southern Hemisphere, it is fall or harvest time. A 32-degree lower temperature will cause crop failures worldwide. The period of distress for the Trumpet is going to endure for a duration of three months. The dissipation is going to occur gradually, leading to the eventual return of celestial light. John, do you have any questions?”

“The same ones I always have concerning these times. Destruction and death troubles my heart. I know Enoch, you have addressed my concerns. It appears we will have a mini-ice age to end winter. However, I appreciate, as the world does, your candid explanation of the Fourth Trumpet.”

“John, thank you for your dedication and commitment. I to long for different times. 'The Time of Sorrows' is happening now, although humanity dismissed these prophecies as myths. The Roman Catholic Church once believed that those foretelling’s had already taken place. They were mistaken. Let me read you an email I received recently, where someone describes Christianity. Christianity is a group of uneducated shepherds who believe in and follow a zombie. John, mankind is discovering that the Bible is not a mere legend. The simple fact that I am alive on this planet serves as evidence supporting the authenticity of God and Jesus's teachings. Include The Trumpets and their ongoing descriptions. A significant number of individuals acknowledge the Bible as a living embodiment of truth. Regrettably, those who have undergone receiving 'The Mark of the Beast' and consented to being implanted with government-issued microchips have irretrievably lost themselves. If an individual has not accepted 'The Mark' via chip implantation, it may be more favorable to face death through starvation in the future. Or take the mark and endure an eternal life within the boundaries of hell. God does not grant exemption from judgment. The act of declining is the ultimate decision. Nothing more, nothing less.”

“I understand Enoch,” John stammered as he ended the broadcast.

### Chapter 85

##### Press Conference, NASA

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### The Cloud

A

lice addressed those present for today’s press conference. “Individuals from the media, I am Alice Markovich, Director of NASA, and to my right is Dr. Schmidt, from the Planetary Defense Coordination Office, a part of NASA. Our team, Sheldon Rikers, Linda Perkins, Logan Diaz, Tom Armstrong, and Glenda Purcell have joined us.”

“This press conference affirms a dense cloud has formed, comprised of a combination of unknown organisms, gases, as well as water vapor from Wormwood, ash from the volcanoes, coupled with debris and moisture from Noelani.”

“According to Eden II news, the parameters of the cloud given by the Witnesses are absolutely correct. We are sending out warnings around the globe regarding extremely cold temperatures. Colder weather is also expected to occur in the Southern Hemisphere. Without a doubt, this is what actual climate change is in reality.”

“Snowfall and blizzards are going to be widespread. They won't melt until summer. Spring won't happen. What may have been a ten-inch snowfall, may be a twenty-inch blizzard. These snows are expected to be hazardous, coming from the cloud. Structures may collapse worldwide from snow falling on their roofs in areas not accustomed to snow and ice. Naturally inhospitable places like Russia are expected to experience a significant loss of buildings, wildlife, and human life. The cold, ice, and snow are going to be overwhelming and chemically infused with what we do not know. Just don’t eat it or drink it.”

“In an eight-hour period every day, every square inch of the world will cool down significantly. This cooling will cause serious crop failures within the areas of the Southern Hemisphere and unprecedented cold temperatures in the Northern Hemisphere.”

“A majority of the Midwest United States is now a swamp caused by Wormwood. This area will freeze and stay frozen until summer when the cloud should dissipate naturally. Temperatures in Texas, Louisiana, Florida, and other Southern States will be a disaster. Their infrastructure for sewage, water lines, and roads cannot sustain prolonged periods of snow, sleet, and freezing weather. This warning also applies to both Europe and Asia. Questions?”

The press behaved in their usual tumultuous manner. Some individuals were engaging in aggressive behavior, raising their voices and resorting to physical force, while others expressed their concerns in an unpleasant manner. Alice concluded that the most prudent course of action would be to gather her belongings and depart. She and her staff had reached a point where she had exhausted all possible actions and words. They exited the pressroom.

### Chapter 86

##### Albert Meers Farm

##### Salina, Kansas

##### The Igloo

T

he news about the upcoming Trumpet had just reached the Meers farm. Doc inquired, “would you like some coffee, Albert?”

“Sure, it will help keep me warm. It's cold out there! We have no gas delivery for propane. The old wood stove I found in the barn from my grandparents works well. The heat makes it feel toasty in the house.”

“I hear it's likely to snow tonight. Our shortwave radio said we are expecting, are you ready for this, twenty-two inches of snow!”

“Yeah, I heard. The snow might be what keeps us alive.”

“How do you figure this, Albert?”

“We can use the snowplow hidden behind the barn. I also have the backhoe parked outside. What I am thinking, let's push the snow and pack it around the house and the barn. The snow will be a natural barrier from wind chills and should help keep the house warmer. I found our old encyclopedias in the attic. I looked up igloos. Snow makes a great insulator.”

“We also need to be prepared to remove snow from the roofs of the barns and house. This means it is necessary for us to clear it off every few hours. It will be all hands-on deck. With the backhoe, I am able to get snow nearly at the top of the barn. Our task is to keep a path to the barn and the height of the snow will help keep wind chills at bay when we need to go there. It will be necessary for us to bring the cows and chickens into the house. My plan is to butcher, then smoke the pigs. Smoked meat is going to last us three years. I won't smoke them until spring They are going to remain frozen in the winter being outside. It will be a mess. Nevertheless, we have a need for milk and eggs. I believe it is possible for us to use a bedroom for our cows and place straw on the floor, as we do in a stall. In olden days, people always brought in their livestock at night into their homes. The chickens we can put in our back enclosed patio, attached to the house. We will get used to the smell.”

“What’s up, dad?” Roy asked as he walked into the kitchen.

Al explained their plan, and Roy agreed with the concept. Al stood up to go to work as he addressed them.

“I need help to move furniture from the front bedroom. We can then turn it into a stall. Roy, you can put our patio furniture in the barn. It is necessary to get the chickens inside before the snow starts and the cloud comes. Temperatures tonight will be a low of minus 10.”

### Chapter 87

##### The Temple Tour

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Elijah’s Masterpiece

T

he announcer began. “Today’s special broadcast is courtesy of the Israeli Broadcasting Company, in Hebrew, English and Arabic. We are covering the opening of ‘The Temple of God’ in Jerusalem. The world can now access 'The Temple' for the first time in over 2,000 years. Elijah is conducting the tour. The commentary is by John Morgan and Benjamin Donavon. Our presentation is being simultaneously transmitted, using both THE Network and Eden II News. Let's turn our attention to John, Benjamin, and Elijah at 'The Temple' steps.”

In a pre-timed scenario, the networks transitioned from anchor desks to live camerapersons, including Elijah and the reporters.

“I am joined here by Elijah the Prophet,” Ben said, “who is going to take us on a guided tour of 'The Temple'. We are standing at the entrance of the Golden Gate or the Eastern Gate. This gate where we are standing is the main entrance. I will now turn our tour over to Elijah.”

“Ben, I would like to express my profound gratitude for Israel's gracious hosting of the grand opening of our Temple. Your introductory statement is right. The Golden Gate, which is sometimes called the Eastern Gate, is where we are located. Following the destruction of 'The Temple Mount' by Iranian bombings, Israel assumed control of the mount and initiated the reconstruction of 'The Temple'. Additionally, we tackled the restoration of the gates. We meticulously adhered to the precise architectural designs of the 'Second Temple' during the reign of Herod. 'The Temple' features a number of extra gates. There are a total of eight side gates, each consisting of double doors that are as tall as they are wide. A set of pillars provides support for the gates, superstructures, and chambers. The pillars have been embellished with gold and silver plating.”

“Undoubtedly, the most splendid gate is the ninth or Eastern Gate, commonly referred to as The Golden Gate, at our present location. The gate we have created is the epitome of our work in The Temple. This gate is regarded as the primary entrance. One can observe that there are precisely 12 simple steps that lead up to the entranceway. The Corinthian Brass gate was constructed, displaying intricate designs that were popular during that time. The dimensions of these doors are quite substantial. During the reign of Herod and continuing to this day, it requires a team of 20 strong individuals to open and close them.”

“This gate was closed off during the rule of the Muslims in the sixteenth century. The decision to seal the gate is rooted in the concerns of the Muslim community, who feared the entrance of a Messianic figure prophesied by the Jewish faith. In order to prevent such occurrences, it was securely sealed. However, it was through that gate that the Messiah, called Jesus Christ or Yeshua, walked through over 2,000 years ago.

“Another difference from the ‘Second Temple’ is the Golden Eagle. This symbol of Rome’s protection is no longer there. We have replaced the bird of prey with a golden cross above the gates.”

“Please follow me. This leads into ‘The Temple area’.”

“As we come through the Golden Gate, we are entering the Women’s Court. This court is one of the inner courts and referred to as the ‘Court of the Women.’ Its name is derived from the law of Moses, denoting Jewish women were only allowed in this area. This location also contains the treasury at the west end. We also know this section for the placement of 13 trumpet-shaped vessels, which were used to collect voluntary offerings of money. We have replicated these vessels and placed them where they were during the time of Christ. You may remember Jesus sitting opposite the treasury when he saw the widow put into one of the containers two copper coins, which were all she had.”

“On my right and left, there is the Court of the Gentiles. This area covers an exceptionally sizeable court. The money changers used this area during Herod’s time. This court is where Jesus expelled the individuals involved in currency exchange from ‘The Temple’.”

“As you can see, we lined the entire outer court, or Gentile’s Court, with colonnades. The east side of the outer Gentile Court is called Solomon's Colonnade. This area is where Jesus was seen walking during the ‘Feast of the Dedication’ or ‘Hanukkah’, where He was found teaching the multitudes.

“The cloisters are aligned in pairs, with the pillars measuring 37 and a half feet in height. Each of these pillars is meticulously carved from a single block of white marble. They undergo a process of smoothing and polishing until they achieve a lasting shine. The roofs are embellished with engraved cedar from Lebanon. The width of the passageways measures 30 feet, encompassing the entirety of the structure.”

“The area of 'The Temple' is open to Gentiles or those who do not practice Judaism. It is possible for them to walk within its boundaries. However, in earlier eras, the Gentiles were strictly prohibited from entering the inner courts and were duly warned. The previous cautionary notice prohibiting visitors from accessing other parts of the court has been rescinded. In historical periods, death was the consequence for non-Jews who ventured into areas other than the Court of Gentiles. It is worth mentioning that the Apostle Paul was subjected to an attack and came perilously close to being beaten to death by an enraged crowd during his final visit to 'The Temple'. His offense involved trespassing into restricted sections of 'The Temple.”

“The inclusion of the 'Tower of Antonia' in 'The Third Temple' is the sole component of 'Herod's Palace' that we integrated. It was in the fortress area that Jesus faced trial in the presence of Pontius Pilate. In the era of Jesus, a contingent of Roman soldiers was stationed at the fortified stronghold of Antonia. It could be found in the northwestern vicinity of 'The Temple' location.”

“The four-corner buildings going clockwise are the chamber of Lepers, the Chamber of Wood, the Chamber of the Nazarites, and the Chamber of Oils.”

“Before us lies a set of fifteen curved steps ascending towards the Gate of Nicanor. This pathway provides access to the interior of 'The Temple'. The doors are constructed of intricately carved bronze. The Gate acquired its name in honor of Nicanor, a wealthy Jew from Alexandria. It has been agreed that we will keep the same title. As we ascend the 15 steps, we can peer into the inner sanctum of The Temple. This particular region is known as the Israelites Courtyard, the Priest Courtyard, where the preparation of sacrifices takes place. Here is where the Altar of Sacrifice is situated.”

“You can see the large laver. The base and the bowl serve the purpose of allowing the priests to cleanse their hands and feet before engaging in any priestly duties. The composition of the basin is solid brass.”

“The Holy Place can be found within the immense edifice. The structure comprises numerous chambers and artifacts. The 'Holy of Holies' features a gilded table known as the 'Table of Showbread,' where loaves of bread are meticulously arranged in accordance with Moses's Laws. The room designated for the priests and storage of robes necessary for sacrifice and ceremonial purposes. A golden lampstand, referred to as a menorah, is equipped with seven oil lamps for the purpose of lighting. Extinguishing this light is strictly prohibited. The abode encompasses the draperies for the top covering. The walls are composed of boards supported by silver feet and secured with wooden bolts. Following that, the purple curtain was used to conceal the 'Holy of Holies'.”

“The outer court is formed by pillars, resting upon bronze pedestals. Hooks with crossbars of silver connect them to hold the embroidered curtains. Also, the recipe and preparation of the oil for the Lampstand is inside. This door is closed to anyone except priests. In Israel, those who hold priestly roles come from the lineage of the Tribe of Levi.”

“The steps you walked up to get to the Women’s Court extend the entire Temple area, coming up from the ‘Gentiles Court’. The upper part of the pillars, as the highest point of the 'Holy of Holies' building, is a combination of gold and gold plating. All the inner courts are reachable by a total of ten gates.”

“How much stone is here in ‘The Third Temple’?” Benjamin inquired.

“I am glad you asked Benjamin. We are looking at 1,800 tons of white marble, 600 tons of limestone, 300 pounds of gold, 20,000 board feet of Lebanon Cedar, and 3 tons of brass. Add to this… mortar, building supplies and labor. Our workforce consisted of 8,000 Jews, who participated in the construction of 'The Temple'.”

“Are there chambers under ‘The Temple’, Elijah?”

“Yes, there are. They are ancient caves and needed to be rebuilt. To illustrate, the drainage for blood from sacrifices required reconfiguring. The liquid drains to a cave. From there, the fluid is pumped out and processed. The same for restrooms. Restrooms are a new necessity for ‘The Temple’. The plumbing access points are old caves under the Second Temple.”

“We understand these hidden caves are where you found the hidden items, including ‘The Ark of the Covenant’ and Menorah. What about Aaron's staff?”

“Aaron’s rod is the staff of Moses. Enoch has it now. He intends to place it in the inner sanctuary before we depart to Heaven.”

“When are you going to leave us, Elijah?”

“Benjamin, read the New Testament. The scriptures will provide necessary details to each of you. Questions?”

Elijah made a choice of a Network reporter from those following them.

“Does 'The Temple' have space for God's throne?

“Once Jesus sets foot upon these stones once more after a span of over 2,000 years, He shall assume His rightful position in the esteemed 'Holy of Holies.' Consequently, 'The Ark of the Covenant' will be transformed into an artifact for display in a museum. As a result of Jesus' ultimate sacrifice, the designated sacrifice areas will no longer exist. The entirety of this area we are currently occupying is designated as the divine throne of Jesus, the Son of God.”

“What if the actual divine entity is God Himself, not Jesus?”

“I believe you are referring to the act of defiling 'The Temple'. If these happen to be your thoughts, then your assertion is accurate. The Antichrist will make the declaration of being God. He intends to defile 'The Temple'. However, I advise you to be cautious when aligning yourself with any party, young man. The duration of the Antichrist's reign is brief.”

The young journalist displayed a displeased expression and remained silent.

“Questions?” Elijah again asked.

No verbal response was given by anyone.

“Excellent. I must make the necessary preparations for tomorrow's inaugural sacrifice. I hope you have a wonderful day.”

“We will now return you to your regular broadcasts,” Benjamin said.

### Chapter 88

##### Brad Williams Reporting

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Cain’s Day

A

fter the announcer finished, Brad began speaking. “Good evening world; I am Brad Williams, anchor of THE Network News, broadcasting from New Babylon, Iraq. We are bringing you the ceremonial signing of the new Constitution drafted by the Alliance of Ten. We will be reporting tonight with my co-anchors, Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan.”

“Over the past few weeks, the Ten have engaged in negotiations to draft a single global Constitution. Based on our sources, the Ten took inspiration from the United States Constitution when creating this new document. This paper includes a Bill of Rights, as well as the principle of equality for all individuals. The main distinction lies in the fact that the individual leaders of the Ten Nation Alliance are going to serve as the governing body. A solitary leader will be elected. This individual will hold the title of 'Supreme Ruler' over the entire world, rather than that of a king.”

“The Ten Leaders consensus acknowledges the necessity for one person to make final decisions. This measure is set to reduce divergent viewpoints effectively, thereby mitigating the risk of armed conflicts. The newly appointed leadership role has a duration of eight years.”

“In contrast to governments of previous eras, every person in the world will receive equal treatment. Each and every person on the planet will be ensured access to essential resources, food, housing, transportation, and education.”

“New laws pertaining to criminals will be stringent. The main purpose of implementing strict punishments is to eradicate crime on a global scale. Individuals who engage in criminal activities against 'The Ten Alliance' shall face punishment by means of the guillotine. Their intention is to make these executions public as a method of effectively communicating their point. The purpose of public executions is to deter crime and ensure the safety of neighborhoods, cities, and residential areas.”

“President Cain will be delivering the introduction of the document titled 'The Ten'. To provide context, it is important to note that the remaining 43 governors of America have reached a consensus that President Cain should officially accept, on behalf of the United States, the conditions outlined in the 'Ten Alliance'. As most of you are aware, the United States is facing significant challenges in its survival. This situation has been brought about by the calamities caused by the Alien Witnesses, Elijah, and Enoch. The Ten has made a commitment to assist in the restoration of America, following widespread devastation that has impacted almost every city nationwide.”

“My apologies for the interruption, Brad,” Nancy stated. “President Cain has stood up and is shaking the hands of the leaders of ‘The Ten’ on the stage with him. He is making his way to the podium. Let’s listen to his speech.”

As Cain stood at the podium, the thunderous applause reverberated through the audience and the stage. After the applause faded away, he cleared his throat and began speaking.

“Respected members of the global community, and respected attendees of 'The Ten'. In our gathering today, we have brought together nations that have historically engaged in warfare due to trade disputes, ideological differences, and resource conflicts. This day symbolizes the beginning, wherein all nations have united as a single entity.”

“Before I proceed any further, I would like to extend my remarks to the individuals residing in the United States. The Alien Witnesses have caused extensive destruction spanning from the Atlantic to the Pacific, encompassing Canada, Mexico, and beyond. Currently, darkness has been brought across the entire globe. The impact of this is resulting in the demise of food-producing plants and triggering a small-scale ice age. Once more, they have summoned extraterrestrial beings to inflict death, anxiety, and suffering upon the inhabitants of the Earth.”

“I have been working in New Babylon, and not in the United States. Our utmost priority is to mitigate the consequences resulting from the presence of these Alien Witnesses. Today, I would like to make an official announcement regarding a plan that will have a direct impact on every American citizen.”

“I recently had a meeting with the governors who have survived in our country. I have been made aware of the rampant presence of lawlessness. There is a severe crisis regarding the supply of food, medical supplies, clean water, and energy. Regrettably, our electrical grid suffered extensive damage. In many instances, seaports are rendered inoperable, while airports, trains, and other means of transportation came to a halt. The availability of fuel for automobiles is nearly non-existent. The extent of the devastation inflicted upon our refineries is beyond repair in numerous areas.”

“Our proposed plan aims to prioritize the resolution of violence-related concerns. The recently ratified Constitution of the Alliance, approved by your state governors, reintroduces capital punishment for numerous offenses committed against law-abiding citizens. A recruitment process is currently in progress to train and equip additional National Guard units, with the purpose of maintaining peace. We strongly encourage our newly arrived immigrants from the Middle East to become members. Upon joining, we will provide you with citizenship.”

“As of last week, we have commenced the operation of transporting thousands of tons of supplies via airlift. The fundamental provisions encompass essential items such as food and emergency medical necessities. There exist a few states that have only suffered minor damage. These are Texas, New Mexico, Arizona, Louisiana, Alabama, Mississippi, Georgia, and Florida. It has been determined that the United States Government will be relocated to Dallas, Texas. The military bases in San Antonio and Fort Cavazos are currently undergoing conversion into National Guard facilities for the purpose of training. The measures being implemented are set to guarantee safety and tranquility on the streets of the United States.”

“The damage inflicted by these Witnesses will necessitate a lengthy period of reconstruction. Many areas have experienced significant destruction to infrastructure, such as roads, bridges, sewers, water works, electrical grids, and airports. Regrettably, specific regions within the United States have regressed to living conditions reminiscent of the 1800s. Nevertheless, we are currently working diligently towards restoring normalcy at the earliest opportunity.”

“Regarding administrative matters, it is necessary for people to have a chip in order to receive assistance. This encompasses individuals who receive government payments from various sources such as Social Security, military retirement, SDI, railroad, and teacher pensions. Military units and financial institutions have established centers for individuals who have not undergone chipping. The completion of the chipping process can be done there.”

“The National Guard has been authorized to use lethal force against people who engage in criminal activities with any form of weaponry. Period! As per our new Constitution, the immediate surrender of all firearms, including hunting rifles, handguns, and any other types, is mandated. Any individual found in possession of a firearm in their residence or on their person beyond 15 days from today will face charges for a capital offense. There has been a permanent suspension on the sale of guns and ammunition.”

“In the Constitution being adopted today, there are provisions outlining serious offenses that carry the punishment of death. The guillotine is the designated means of carrying out the execution. This particular procedure is characterized by its portability and efficiency. Moreover, this method of carrying out a sentence is considered a humane approach. The level of pain experienced by offenders is significantly lower compared to other methods of execution. Public executions will be held in predetermined locations. The notion that witnessing the deaths of criminals discourages further criminal activity is well-established. The Capital Crimes Law has a global impact on every individual. It is imperative that citizens no longer live in fear of leaving their residences due to threats of violence, robbery, burglary, sexual assault, or asset theft.”

“In another act, effective today, I am resigning as the President of the United States. The responsibilities will be transferred to our Vice President, Jamal Jones.”

After speaking, Cain allowed a few moments of silence for his words to be processed and understood.

“My decision to resign is based on two main factors. My first reason is centered on the important work we are doing here in New Babylon. This work is of utmost importance. The reason is that it is crucial for defending the world against the constant assaults of the alien terrorists. As a second point, I just received information this morning that The Alliance of Ten elected me as the 'Supreme Leader' of the free world.”

As soon as the news of Cain's appointment spread, the auditorium filled with thunderous applause. The ovation lasted for a period of almost five minutes, with people clapping continuously. After the cheering had subsided, Cain resumed his address.

“It is important for me to stress that my current job bears no resemblance to a dictatorship whatsoever. It is expected that a significant number of individuals will argue in favor of this being the case. Especially the terrorist of Eden II. The main purpose of this position is to serve as the determining factor in the event of a tie among the Ten. The term is specifically designated for a duration of eight years and no other period. Let me emphasize once again that this position is not a dictatorship, but rather a collaborative and inclusive role. In accordance with the succession laws of the United States, Vice President Jamal Jones will assume the position of leader of the United States, together with 'The Alliance of Ten', as mandated.”

“At this moment, I would like to pass on the podium to Aafre Waldger, who will take the floor and provide an overview of the key points outlined in our revolutionary World Constitution designed specifically for the people.”

Aafre's journey towards the lectern was accompanied by the start of a resounding applause.

“I heard Aafre,” Nancy whispered, “is now called the Secretary of Commerce and Rebuilding. Cain did not mention his latest title when he introduced him. He’s speaking.”

“The new 'World Constitution' consists of a comprehensive set of laws that have been specifically crafted with the goal of achieving peace and eventually fostering harmony for every individual residing on our planet. It is my intention to read the preamble.”

“The Alliance of Ten Nations, along with the collaboration of nations worldwide, hereby announces its declaration that The New Constitution of the World is a significant document promoting peace.”

“The governing of the world involves each and every person, as each living individual becomes a shareholder. The laws of the earth ensure that each individual, regardless of their background or status, is treated with equality and fairness. Any union of two will be recognized as lawful in marriage. The concept of a global society without borders represents a future where geographical divisions are eliminated, allowing for unrestricted movement and cultural exchange among nations. Every person will possess the freedom to journey to any destination in the world, whether it be a country, state, or city.”

“What this implies is that passports are now obsolete and unnecessary. Your imbedded chip is designed to provide us with instant identification of your identity. According to this passage in our new Constitution, possessing the chip grants you unrestricted freedom to travel anywhere. Without the implant, travel will be impossible.”

As Aafre continued reading the preamble, each word resonated with meaning and purpose.

“In an effort to promote access to education, the government will be providing it free of cost. This encompasses various educational pathways, such as college, trade schools, and the retraining of older citizens. The majority of taxes collected, 80 percent to be exact, are intended to enhance the well-being of humanity rather than benefiting the government.”

“Each person shall receive the identical wage as their counterpart. If you work as a janitor, you are guaranteed to earn the same salary as a doctor. Discrimination is a crime that carries the punishment of capital punishment, as it has been strictly outlawed. In the coming years, prisons will be a thing of the past. Those who commit crimes are destined to face the ultimate punishment—death.”

“The last item in our Constitution's preamble, and I am paraphrasing, reads…”

“In the future, all of humanity is destined to be united under a single Universal Church. The headquarters are located in Babylon. The administration of it will be a joint effort between Peter the Second, the Shia leader, Shahin Shasahvar, and Abbas Abu Laden, the Sunni leader.”

“From ancient times to the present day, religious tensions have been a primary catalyst for numerous wars worldwide. The pair of dominant religions of the world have reached a consensus to embrace and venerate a single deity. The truth will be officially proclaimed by the Church when the appropriate time comes. This duo of religions have many similarities and overlap in their teachings. Here among us, there is only one true god, and his presence is unmistakable. Soon, his real identity will be unveiled. Thank you. Your kindness is greatly appreciated.”

Aafre left the podium, the sound of applause echoing in his ears. General Stoups confidently walked to the stage, taking his place in front of the crowd.

“I have been given the task of addressing the world about military issues, a weighty responsibility that I must fulfill. With the adoption of the new Constitution, a sense of unity pervades, as all nations of the globe fall under a single command. Our leader, Robert Cain, holds the esteemed position of Commander-in-Chief. I am the Supreme Leader, second only to him. Among the commanders beneath me are representatives from each of 'The Alliance of Ten', adding diversity and expertise to our group.”

“The world's primary military complex was strategically located near New Babylon. Within a span of two years, our nation's army will grow exponentially, boasting a force of over 200 million soldiers, all prepared to safeguard our world. They will always be on high alert, vigilant for any signs of dissent against 'The Alliance', their eyes and their ears attuned to even the slightest whispers of rebellion. Today's military operates as a peacekeeping force, prioritizing diplomacy over aggression. Unlike the soldiers belonging to the United Nations, this one possesses a formidable set of teeth. The military forces will be sent out as needed to suppress any nations that seek to disrupt global peace. Furthermore, our armies are diligently preparing themselves to defend against a potential extraterrestrial invasion.”

“Our knowledge confirms that Enoch and Elijah are not of this Earth, but rather visitors from an unknown realm. They arrived with the intention of draining our strength. We are trying to find out what will kill them. On several occasions, we have witnessed the eerie alien vapor engulfing and shielding Enoch. Once we can learn to break through this mist, we will finally see our enemies and take them down. Their reign of fear and destruction is nearing its end.”

Applause erupted throughout the entire place, filling the air with a thunderous roar. After the ovation ceased, the General continued with his speech, showing no signs of faltering in his determination.

“With unwavering vigilance, we will keep our watch of the Heavens, alert for any signs of an invader. Our training is designed to focus on preparing us to defend against any threats that descend from the sky. What I am referring to is not the epic saga of Star Wars, or the exploits of a superhero in a comic book turned into a movie. Earth, our precious home, requires our diligent protection. Their ancient alien scriptures explicitly mention a future invasion, either from the celestial realms or from the depths of space. When they arrive, we will be prepared and waiting. Thank you for giving me your valuable time.”

**The**

**Fifth Trumpet**



### Chapter 89

##### John Roddenburg Reporting

##### Eden II

##### The Fifth Trumpet

T

he announcer began the introductions. “People of the world, welcome to Eden II News, live tonight. Here is your host, John Roddenburg.”

“Good evening world. The Fifth Trumpet takes center stage in tonight's broadcast, revealing its mysterious and powerful significance. Described in Revelation by John, the Trumpet unleashes a series of calamities that will bring about widespread suffering. Enoch will provide a vivid description of the next Trumpet event. Before we speak with Enoch, let's hear Reverend Marks' thoughts on today's announcements from New Babylon. He will specifically comment on the election of Robert Cain, the former President of the United States, as the leader of 'The Ten'. Reverend Marks, give us a rundown of what happened today in Babylon with Cain.”

“It’s simple John, the prophecies have come true. The Antichrist, the Son of Satan himself, has taken the reins of power from the world. He alone is building an army whose sole purpose is to defeat Christ during the second coming. What he failed to say in their new Constitution is that the False Prophet Peter the 2nd will soon make following all other religions a crime punishable by death.”

“What will replace religion, Reverend Marks?”

“First, let me explain how it will occur. In Ancient Rome, the reigning Caesar was regarded as divine. The Caesar then appointed lesser gods to be worshiped. This became the law of the land. What occurred today is Rome has risen from the ashes. Our world is now under Roman Rule. What will happen next is the Antichrist will soon receive a mortal head wound, which will kill him. The False Prophet will raise him from the dead, on live television worldwide. He intends to, after his resurrection, declare himself as god. He plans to desecrate 'The Temple' in Israel. Afterwards, that person will break the seven-year peace between Israel and the world.”

“Thank you, Reverend. Cardinal Cullen Mahoney is also here with us to comment on the events today in Babylon.”

The camera zoomed out to include Cardinal Mahoney.

“Cardinal Mahoney, what is your take on Cain and the Church?”

“We know John, the Pope is a demon. This malevolent being plans to join Islam and Catholicism together. When they do as the scripture states, being a Christian or following any other religion means death by the guillotine. 'The Alliance of Ten' is determined to compel the world to worship the Antichrist, the Son of Satan. The penalty for not worshiping the embodiment of evil is death. The Antichrist, obviously, is none other than Robert Cain!”

“When can we expect this, Cardinal?”

“Immediately after Enoch and Elijah are assassinated.”

John turned to Enoch.

“Is this correct?”

“Yes, this is right, John. We have discussed this before.”

“Do you know the date?”

“November 30th. This date marks the end of God's time for me and Elijah. November 30th is when the end of our 3 ½ years of prophesying to the world will occur. I announced myself on June 1st, nearly three years ago.”

“Who is going to step into your shoes?”

“You, the people here at Eden II, and the 144,000 evangelical Messianic Jews.”

“Let’s change the subject for a moment, Enoch. What of the Fifth Trumpet?”

Enoch reached into his robe and pulled something out.

“To answer your question, John, I am holding in my hands a grasshopper, or at least what we recognize as a grasshopper. You, I am sure, remember when we turned them loose in Iran a few years ago?”

“Yes, I remember,” John replied as the camera zoomed in on the locust in Enoch’s hand.

Enoch then reached into his robe and pulled out another insect.

“You are familiar with cicadas, are you not, John?”

“Yes, they only appear every 17 years.”

“You are correct. Cicadas appear from the soil every 17 years to molt and mate. We know from John’s Revelation; a hybrid locust will appear. This one is dissimilar compared to the locust we are familiar with, or the cicada. These new locusts have been deep in the earth since creation. They dwell in the bottomless pit, hell, Sheol or Gahanna. They are fierce and terrifying. They do not eat the leaves, grass, or any plants. Their purpose is to inflict pain on everyone with their stingers. John describes this woe. The verses are found in Revelation, Chapter 9. I will paraphrase the content.”

“God is about to awaken them. He has sent an Angel to open the bottomless pit they live in. This area is the endless abyss. Michael the archangel will cast Satan, and the Fallen 200 into for a thousand years.”

“Before I go any further, I need to clear up a misconception regarding Abaddon's name. This has often been taught or interpreted as a person. Many claim this label also means Satan. However, Biblical Antiquities refer to Abaddon as a place. The Jews identify it as Sheol, Christians describe it as hell. Abaddon is not a mystical creature or a demon. Abaddon is one of the compartments of Gehenna. You may remember Christ refers to Gehenna. What the term truly signifies is an underworld abode of lost souls or hell. The place John talks about is where Satan resides. The abode of evil ones is the proper interpretation of the place called Abaddon or Apollyon. Let me emphasize, Abaddon is not a person’s name!”

“According to Jewish scholars, this name is intricately woven into religious texts and holds deep meaning. In simple terms, Jews describe this pit as a place filled with torment. These hellish creatures will unleash unimaginable torment upon the world. Prepare for a world overwhelmed by hordes of these beings. I have one with me.”

The camera zoomed to the peculiar being as Enoch held it in his hand.

“One look at this creature and you'll realize it dwarfs both grasshoppers and cicadas in size. The face had rugged features and strong jawline typically associated with a man's face. Prepare to be amazed as I open its jaw, revealing its impressive set of teeth. John described the teeth as sharp and resembling those of a lion.”

As Enoch continued his description, Eden II's cameras zoomed in on the creature's face, capturing every detail and showcasing its menacing teeth. Enoch carefully turned the creature sideways, examining its intricate details.

“The antennas of the creature resembled long strands of a woman's hair. Its wings resemble those of a cicada, extending out with exceptional length. Their wings beat faster than a hummingbird. You will notice that it has a stinger, curled up like a scorpion, ready to strike.”

“These resilient creatures have developed an immunity to pesticides, making them difficult to eliminate. Like iron breastplates, their undersides provide impenetrable protection. This one is lifeless, devoid of any signs of vitality. As I apply pressure, the breastplate remains unyielding, resisting my attempts to squash it with my fingers. As scripture states, their breast plate is unbreakable, resembling the strength of iron.”

The cameras focused back on John and Enoch.

“This insect has a two-fold use. The first purpose is to subject humanity to torment for a duration of five months. Another approach is to differentiate between Christians and non-Christians based on their beliefs and practices. The Antichrist will exploit this method to distinguish his followers from non-believers, as well as to identify Christians who remain unharmed.”

“Individuals like you, the Reverend, and Cardinal Mahoney need not worry about being stung by these creatures. Only the unsealed in Christ will feel stings. Torment awaits those who reject Jesus as the Messiah.

“Their sting is not lethal to humanity. Their sting will bring unbearable agony, as intense as the suffering of a cancer patient deprived of medication. These stings are so potent that no drug can provide relief. The pain will be excruciating, like a thousand needles piercing through every inch of your body. Those unfortunate enough to be stung by their vicious tail will scream in agony, wishing for their lives to end. Unfortunately, those who lack faith won't experience the release of death.”

“Enoch, do you know when this Trumpet is scheduled to start?”

“John, we enter this unfamiliar terrain tomorrow. These hordes of insects will be here during the vibrant seasons of spring and summer. As the Fifth Trumpet sounds, the air will be filled with piercing wails and ear-splitting sounds, leaving humanity with no doubt of the existence of a higher power. In the face of the predicament, they will accuse God, myself, and Elijah, pointing fingers at us. All will hate Elijah and I, and everyone here at Eden II. People will cry out for our demise, their voices filled with anger and desperation, demanding the annihilation of even God, Himself. People from every corner of the globe will come together, united in their mission to overthrow God and embrace the Antichrist as their ultimate god.”

“In addition,” Reverend Marks emphasized, “this will effectively uncover any spies hiding within our Christian sanctuaries across the globe. If one of their members gets stung, they will know they are spies and traitors to Christ.”.

“Well said, Reverend,” Enoch remarked, nodding in agreement.

Enoch summarized the Fifth Trumpet, vividly recounting the chaos and cacophony of the trumpet's blast.

“For Christians, this locust plague is seen as a test of faith rather than a source of fear. I would recommend that individuals tune in to this broadcast and, if they haven't already, open their hearts to Jesus and accept Him as their Savior. However, if you have accepted 'The Mark', all other concerns become irrelevant.”

John paused, taking a deep breath, before continuing.

“In other news, governments around the world are currently carrying out widespread gun confiscations. The United States is a primary target, drawing the focus of numerous adversaries. We are aware of areas where the sound of gunfire echoes between the National Guard and those who refuse to surrender their weapons.”

“In Texas, numerous uprisings have taken place, with thousands of people banding together to form armies in resistance against the government. According to sources, the rebels have a greater number than the National Guard. While waiting for reinforcements, they have temporarily halted the confiscation of guns in this state.”

Enil motioned to John to break off the broadcast.

“We'll return shortly with more from Eden II.”

### Chapter 90

##### Sanctuary In Glacier National Park

##### Goat Haunt, MT

##### The Pain of a Sting

I

t had been three days since Enoch told the world the Fifth Trumpet had sounded. Ben found himself in the company of Paul, Richard, and the other prominent figures of their group. While they were discussing the Trumpets from Revelation, suddenly the piercing screams of two women filled the meeting room. One was in a state of hysteria, her voice filled with frantic, high-pitched shrieks.

“Benjamin, this is something you absolutely cannot miss! Outside the cave, we have a swarm of these things Enoch described! They are getting closer and closer to the mouth of the cave!”

They followed the women to the mouth of the cave and walked outside. The sound of a thunderous train echoed through the air, startling them as they stood their. As each person looked ahead, they were met with the sight of a vast congregation of those creatures.

“Stay with me,” Ben said to the others. “I have faith,” he declared confidently, his voice filled with unwavering belief.

As Ben, Paul, Richard, and the other leaders stood at the entrance of the cave, the air was filled with the hushed, fearful whispers of those watching. Coming toward them, they could see a swarm of creatures flying in the sky, their movements eerily reminiscent of humans. As far as the eye could see, there were thousands of them, creating a mesmerizing spectacle. Paul humbly knelt down and whispered his heartfelt prayers to God. Richard and the others followed suit, joining Ben. A swirling mass of insects swiftly surrounded them. A foreboding buzzing sound accompanied the petrifying sight of the swarm. Everyone standing there avoided getting stung. The cave was suddenly overrun by a swarm of locusts, their buzzing wings creating a deafening cacophony that filled the air. They were countless in number. The elders' ears were filled with the piercing screams of those who had been stung. Cries of agony echoed through the cave as a 30-year-old man came running out, his face contorted with pain. He could hear the sound of his wife's cries as she ran after him, tears staining her cheeks.

“Kill me!” he cried out in agony, his voice filled with desperation and the weight of excruciating suffering.

“I urged you to embrace Jesus with fiery conviction, fervently emphasizing the importance of a deep, unwavering connection.” Between her sobs, she managed to add, “May God's fury befall you as your retribution.”

Adding to her agony, she saw her oldest son running through the cave, his screams echoing off the walls. She ran to him, wrapping her arms around him tightly, offering him solace. The mother's love proved futile as his shrieks continued without pause.

They heard many more screaming after these creatures stung them. The elders were greeted by the sight of numerous individuals in agony from the stings as they ventured further into the cave. At a specific spot, a crowd of a hundred or more could be seen, their desperate pleas for relief echoing in the air. As they watched, the swarm emerged from the depths of their home, filling the surroundings with a deafening hum. They exited through the mouth of the cave. The sound of their wings beating grew fainter and fainter until the scourge disappeared completely. In their wake, the wails of several hundred afflicted people echoed through the air. Richard, feeling frustrated, directed his attention towards Ben for some answers.

“Benjamin, what should we do with unbelievers in agony?”

“Separate them Richard, from the others. They have made their choice in life, and now they navigate the uncertain path ahead. We shall provide nourishment and offer them solace in any way we can. After they have recuperated from the stings, we will make arrangements to send them elsewhere. If individuals are willing to embrace Jesus as their Lord and Savior, we can extend them a warm invitation to stay. Fortunately, they are free from the weight of 'The Mark'.

“The mind is strong,” Paul said, his voice filled with conviction, “but their hearts are feeble, lacking both fear of God and belief. The suffering they experience now pales in comparison to the horrors that await them in Sheol.”

The leaders sternly instructed a few of the sanctuary's elders to gather up the non-believers. Their task was to move them to a newly designated spot. Once this job was completed, the haunting sound of the call to prayer echoed through the air. Every born-again believer thanked God for His protection from the destructive impact of the Fifth Trumpet.

**The**

**False Prophet**

### Chapter 91

##### Albert Meers Farm

##### Salina, Kansas

##### Planting and No Surrender

T

he beginning of a late spring was upon the land. The coldness of the Fourth Trumpet departed, and the torment of the Fifth Trumpet had disappeared. Albert’s friends and family were safe.

“The snow wall we built is nearly depleted, dad,” Roy commented. “What are our current plans, and are we going to surrender our guns?”

“No, we will never relinquish our weapons. Once the government gets these criminals under control, then we may discuss it. In the meantime, we need to clear the ash off a couple of acres behind the barn and house. I don't want it visible from the highway. We are capable of planting vegetables and preserving them this summer. Hopefully, survive another year.”

Doc exited the residence and approached Al and Roy.

“Anything I am able to assist with, Albert?”

“Yes, go with Roy to clear an acre of ash off the farm. We are planting a vegetable garden. I have been reading the Bible. I believe we are going to have a severe drought soon. We need to start our cultivation early and gather the crops before it begins. I don't know when the lack of rainfall will happen. Maybe next year. Scripture has no definitive timeline regarding the Bowls of God's Wrath.”

“What of our guns, Albert?” Doc asked.

“As I told my son, we are keeping them. I do not trust the authorities. At this time, everyone must fend for themselves. Until this situation changes, we will protect what is ours and our families.”

“I am with you.”

“Let us get to work and worry about feeding ourselves for now. Roy, hook up the plow and let’s clear an area for a garden.”

As Roy and Doc went to start up the plow, Al’s mind raced with thoughts of the consequences if someone discovered him and his family with the guns. Is there a possibility that they will soon face the guillotine for their Christian beliefs? Or for neglecting to surrender their firearms? Is his family in danger of being harmed too, or is he the sole target? His mind buzzed with a multitude of unanswered questions. Maybe, for now, it's best to let chaos rule in cities, to avoid having them come here. They were small potatoes compared to the atrocities occurring in the cities.

### Chapter 92

##### Hills Above Jerusalem

##### Israel

##### Final Days

E

lijah sat with Enoch as they gazed from the mountaintop outside Jerusalem. The season change marks their last summer on earth and only six months to finish their missions. A small fire was cooking their favorite meal of leg of lamb. Elijah turned the leg on the split, then turned his attention to Enoch.

“Is the False Prophet to start his apostasy to deceive the world?”

“Yes Elijah, it is time. Cain is going to be shot in the head, and this evil one, Peter the Second, is going to raise him up and later bring down fire from Heaven. However, the celestial fire is set to occur after we are gone. Then the bowls, or plagues, are going to descend on the followers of the Antichrist along with the final Trumpets.”

“Enoch, our time on earth is limited to a few months. I sometimes wish we could stay and finish off the battles with the demons.”

“Not me. God's plan is to give the Antichrist and his demons free rein to corrupt what is left of humanity. They will have no interference, except from the seven bowls. The sixth and seventh Trumpets mark the end of humanity's time.”

“We have never died Elijah,” Enoch commented. “I wonder what it feels like.”

“I do not know, Enoch. We only know in 3 ½ days after death, as Jesus, we will rise from the dead. They intend to televise our resurrection in front of the entire world. Everyone is going to witness us being called up to Heaven. Since we are aware of this, we can also comprehend that death is a part of our spirit transitioning from one life to eternity.”

“I totally agree. How are things in Israel?”

“I informed them a few months ago they will become occupied, 'The Temple' desecrated, then Israel will be invaded. However, the invasion occurs, On the Last Day of humanity’s rule. The assault will fail, as Jesus and His Angels defeat humanity and the demon’s war machine. Regarding another matter, only around 20% of people in Israel were affected by the creatures. I hope those stung come to their senses and accept Christ. Good news, the majority of Israel was spared.”

“Ever wonder why Elijah, what is occurring now needs to be done this way? Would it have not been easier to just wipe out humanity as God did during the flood? Then have the divine start over?”

“Maybe. God devised a meticulous strategy to neutralize the 200 Fallen demons. They possess immense power in various aspects. Furthermore, Satan despises everything about creation. His desire is to eliminate them completely. The one thing he longs for is to ensure that humans never experience the same joys he once did. When the first of humankind was created, he spoke to the Council and expressed regret for making a creature superior to himself. He has spent countless millennia tirelessly defending his stance. God's plan involved a partial destruction of creation, providing him with a firsthand view of the aftermath. Meanwhile, Satan would relentlessly scheme to manipulate humanity and lure them into temptation. When we depart, Satan is going to have amassed a staggering number of corrupted souls, reaching into the billions. With God's help, on the Last Day of battle, Jesus will annihilate the majority of his enemies. Let's enjoy our meal. Afterwards, we shall offer our prayers for humanity to seek repentance in Jesus.”

### Chapter 93

##### Peter the 2nds Apartment New Vatican

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### End of the Caliphate

P

ope Peter the 2nd said, “Cardinal Richital, welcome, glad you could make it. You know the Ayatollah Shahin Shasahvar from Iran, and Abbas Abu Laden, successor of the late Abu Bakr al-Baghdadi. Please sit, as we have many items to discuss.”

“Yes, we do Peter,” Shahin said, his voice dripping with anger as he immediately went after Abbas.

“We have issues with the Sunnis,” Shahin said, his finger pointing directly at Abbas. “Our plan of establishing one Universal Church does not align with your beliefs. Your refusal, Abbas, to recognize the interconnectedness of Judaism, Christianity, and Islam is clearly apparent. Firmly declaring that God is not among us and refusing to worship the true god of the earth, you have made it clear the Sunnis reject us.”

“Abbas, can you confirm if this is true?” Cardinal Richital inquired with a curious expression on his face. “Shall we persist in our dispute regarding the Caliphate?”

“Yes, we are. Until the Shiites or Shahin here acknowledge our perspective, we will not align with your plans. Our representation encompasses more than 85 percent of Muslims across the globe. Why is it necessary for us to yield and submit?”

Cardinal Richital sat with his eyes fixed directly on Abbas, studying his every move. The others knew to wait in silence, as the Cardinal sat deep in contemplation. With a nod, he called out Abbas' name and began speaking.

“Abbas,” he said with disdain, “you are an outsider, not part of our group.”

“Who are you, Cardinal?” he demanded, his eyes narrowing with suspicion.

“Who are we, Abbas? I'll give you a visual representation. Today, Abbas, you will experience an epiphany that will reshape your future.”

“Cardinal, can you explain the significance of this to our current discussion? Does this pertain to Cain's control over everyone?

“Abbas, brace yourself for a life-altering realization that will revolutionize your perspective.”

“Cardinal, no matter what you say or present, I remain skeptical and unwavering in my beliefs. Our steadfast dedication to our Sunni beliefs is everlasting.”

“I understand and respect your determination to safeguard your ideas and convictions. Soon, Abbas, you won't need to worry about the rightful successor to Mohammed. Get ready for a revelation like no other, because I'm about to share something unprecedented with you. Your perspective on the separation issue, which has endured for over a thousand years, is finally going to shift.”

“Cardinal,” he said, frustration evident in his voice, “you're simply going around and around without making any clear points.”

“Maybe Abbas,” Ramuell, said, his mischievous grin hinting at a daring plan. “In only a few minutes, everything will become clear to you. First, let me introduce you to the people who are here today. You know them as the Pope, the Ayatollah, and a Catholic Cardinal - three influential figures in the realm of religion. The truth of our identity remains elusive, hidden from your comprehension. I am Ramuell, the thunder God, whose name strikes fear into the hearts of mortals. Sariel, known as the Ayatollah, is the mastermind behind the understanding of the moon's motion. Peter, the Second's true identity, is Kasdeja. We, the 200, tower above all others, asserting our dominance in this realm. Our leader is immensely influential, capable of obliterating your entire following across the globe. However, eliminating your followers goes against our best interests.”

“So, you all have different names. It doesn't really matter to me.”

“You shall. Abbas, rest assured that this is certain to capture your attention and concern. Let me enlighten you with the truth, opening your eyes to new perspectives.”

In that very instant, Abbas's chair, with him still in it, was sent hurtling across the room, crashing forcefully into the wall. Abbas crumpled to the floor, his body hitting the ground with a thud.

“What are you doing? Why would you do this to me?”

As Abbas tried to pick himself up, he found himself lifted effortlessly to the ceiling by the demon, suspended in midair.

“Abbas, would you like me to provide further details? My next few actions will be excruciating,” Ritchital said, his mouth watering in anticipation of causing more pain to Abbas.

“Please, Cardinal, lower me down,” he pleaded, his trembling voice betraying his fear as he dangled perilously close to the ceiling. “How are you able to do this?”

“Supernatural powers, Abbas. Now, are you ready to engage in a conversation or persist in an argument?”

“Talk Cardinal, I will listen. Put me back down on the floor.”

Ramuell pointed his hand at Abbas, guiding him with a gentle touch to the ground, ensuring his feet landed first. Ramuell walked across the room, his footsteps echoing softly on the polished wooden floor, and retrieved Abbas's chair. He brought it back to the table, placing it gently with a soft thud. As Abbas settled into the chair, Ramuell towered above him.

“Once again, Abbas, are you still in need of further proof? If you do, we will gladly accommodate your request. As previously stated, the decision we make next will have consequences that are painful.”

“Cardinal, how did you manage to do this?” he asked in astonishment. “What supernatural abilities are you using to move chairs effortlessly, suspend me in mid-air, and strip away my autonomy over my own body? Are you the embodiment of evil known as Al-Shaitan or Iblis?”

“I've already given an answer to the question you asked. We are the omnipotent beings who have reigned over the earth since the dawn of creation. We are the ones who bestowed Mohammed with the gift of Islam, shaping his destiny.”

“What do you want?” he asked, his voice filled with suspicion.

“For you to understand and believe the truth, then speak of unity between the Sunnis, Shiites and the new Church of Peter.”

“What do you perceive as the truth?” Abbas asked, now in total confusion about what is occurring here today.

“God is alive and well on planet earth. The chosen religion has always been Islam. The belief system was tainted by the actions of Jews and Christians. The reason Mohammed was granted the wisdom was due to the corruption that prevailed.”

“What are you saying, Cardinal?” He asked, his voice still filled with confusion.

“The death of Jesus stands in stark contrast to the vibrant existence of Mohammed in Heaven. Al-Shaitan's work revolves around the teachings and principles of Christianity. Soon, we will make this announcement known to the entire world. Unfortunately, you are blocking our path. Now take a closer look at Peter - notice the mischievous twinkle in his eyes. He has something to show you, and it's unlike anything you've ever seen before.”

Abbas turned his gaze towards Peter, trying to read the expressions on his face.

“Focus on my hands, Abbas,” he instructed, as his hands and his fingers were moving with precision moving in a circle then closing into a prayer position. As Peter opened his hands, the world materialized above them, spinning and traversing through the vast expanse of the universe. A shimmering hologram of the moon suddenly materialized in the sky, as if by magic. Watching the scene unfold from Peters hands, Abbas marveled at the sight of the celestial body, its elegant orbit around the earth. Suddenly, a face materialized upon the earth's image, hovering above Peter's hands.

“Look at me, Abbas Abu Laden, then place yourself on your knees. I am your founder; I am your leader; I am your Prophet. I am Mohammed.”

The room was so quiet that even a pin drop could be heard as Abbas stared at the mesmerizing image of the earth and moon, hovering above Peter's open palms. The face that spoke belonged to Mohammed.

“On your knees, servant,” the image again commanded, its voice dripping with menace. “Or I will drain the lifeblood from your veins, leaving you to perish in your current position.”

Trembling uncontrollably, Abbas collapsed to his knees.

“Abbas,” the voice said in a firm tone. “You must obey the commands of these Angels immediately and without any doubt. They are of your god, Allah, who is among you. Failing to obey my instructions will have grave consequences - not only will you lose your life, but you will also be condemned to eternal suffering in Jahannam.”

“Mohammed, is it truly you before me?” He asked with his forehead touching the ground in a soft whisper.

“I am the chosen one,” he declared to Abbas with conviction. “I am your Prophet, your guiding light. You must listen to these Angels with you today. Their unwavering sense of direction guides them without fail. Following them is a necessity.”

Trembling, Abbas needed reassurance that this was not a trick. With his head still bowed low, he forcefully spoke to the image, desperate for confirmation.

“With all respect great leader and prophet of my faith, is there any way for me to know without a doubt that you are the Prophet communicating with me? Or is the image I see just a clever illusion meant to deceive me?”

“Abbas, you have very little faith. Your immense power in the world has influenced your thinking, leading you to believe that you are invincible. Despite your insolence, I have decided to show mercy today. You are allowed to ask one question. What will it be? I will respond to any inquiry you can come up with, provided that it is original and distinctive. Consider something special that only you and I know about.”

Abbas couldn't tear his eyes away from the hologram, captivated by the vivid depiction of the Earth. As he lay there, the one secret he had never shared with anyone consumed his mind. Doubt filled his thoughts as he debated whether to speak of his hidden sin. In a moment of desperation, he couldn't hold it back any longer and blurted it out.

“Please share with me the name of the elusive son from my youth.”

“In America, Abbas, is where you sent him secretly to hide your infidelity. His given name is a Jewish American name. He found his forever home in Kansas, with a loving American couple who adopted him. The David family bestowed upon him the name Samuel. He grew up in a Jewish household, surrounded by the traditions and beliefs of his faith.”

Abbas hung his head, the weight of silence heavy in the air. Embarrassment washed over him as the burden of their knowledge about his transgression settled in.

“Indeed, you are right. The heaviness of my secret has finally been lifted, and I can't help but feel a strange combination of freedom and trepidation. The world is now informed of the sins I've committed. I deeply regret my lie and earnestly ask for forgiveness.”

“This one time, I will make an exception and grant your request. The call for obedience is currently upon you to bring an end to the war and the rift among Muslims.”

Abbas humbly lowered his head, his forehead gently touching the cool floor in complete submission.

“Consider it done, Master,” he responded, his voice filled with loyalty.

As the image faded away, the face disappeared from Peter's hands, leaving Abbas with a sense of emptiness. Ramuell felt a feeling of satisfaction, believing that they had successfully converted Abbas.

“Abbas, it is time for you to rise and face the challenges ahead. The Prophet himself has bestowed his blessings upon you. There is no moment to lose, as we have important work that needs to be done.

### Chapter 94

##### John Roddenburg Reporting

##### Eden II

##### World Chaos

T

he announcer began his introduction. “People of the world, welcome to Eden II News, live tonight. Here is our host, John Roddenburg.”

“Good evening world. We are here to bring you the day’s news. I am joined once again with my co-anchors, Mary Ann Sinclair, and Geraldo Vasquez.”

“Today’s top news story is still about the ‘Fifth Trumpet’, causing serious issues around the world. Their sting has affected billions of people worldwide. Fortunately, no one here at Eden II has been touched. We are followers of Jesus Christ. God’s torment of the unsaved does not affect those sealed in Jesus’s Name. This has now passed.”

“In other news, the United States is not functioning as a country. Newly appointed President Jamal Jones was quoted saying, ‘Rebuilding is on hold, because of the flying insects from hell itself. In addition, most cities are under siege by criminals and gangs. There is no functioning central government. In the upper Midwest, the water is still tainted, and the swamp continues to grow. The West Coast, which never fully regained functionality from the first earthquakes nearly three years ago, continues to be without water and services. Southern California is a place where roving gangs dominate and enforce their own rules.”

“Everyone has left Washington, DC completely. Police from both Baltimore and Fairfax Virginia are barely holding on to their cities. The authorities still cannot establish any resemblance to civil order in certain areas.”

“People worldwide feel the desperate need for clean, drinkable water. Waterways worldwide are tainted by Wormwood, leaving a persistent foul odor in the air. The devastating effects of bad drinking water have taken numerous lives in Africa, India, China, and Russia. A low number of Christian residents and a lack of easily accessible clean water sources characterized these places. Furthermore, the stings have left behind a enduring agony. Middle Eastern countries, predominantly Muslim, are also grappling with the agony inflicted by the locusts. This Trumpet has caused numerous people in Israel to suffer from its stings, as reported by many.”

“In breaking news today, the Pope of the Catholic Church, the Ayatollah of Iran, and the Sunnis leader Abbas Abu Laden, held a press conference concerning Islam. Joining me tonight for commentary on this issue is the former President of Iran, Mauvad Shasahvar, a renowned expert in international relations. A few years ago, he embraced Christianity and now works at Eden II, hosting two weekly shows to share his journey from Islam to Christianity.”

Eden II’s camera panned out to focus on John, Enoch and Mauvad.

“What is the significance today of the press conference between these religious leaders?” John asked.

“It appears John, the Sunnis and the Shiites have come to terms with an age-old bitter disagreement.”

“What disagreement is this?”

“The issue they face can be traced back to the period following Muhammad's death. When he passed away, he left Islam without a successor. Opinions were divided, with some favoring one person as the rightful heir and others supporting someone entirely different. This single issue ignited wars, sparked heated disagreements, and gave rise to diverse views and interpretations of the Qur'an.”

“Doesn't it seem peculiar that they have come to a resolution regarding their differences?”

“Yes, and no. If it weren't for the apocalyptic times we live in, my answer would be a definite yes. The power of the true Lord God of Abraham was evident as humanity witnessed the effects of the first Five Trumpets. Peter, the 2nd, needs to gather a large following to oppose the religious figure of Jesus, which is why the two sects of Islam joining forces are not unexpected. The collaboration between the unity of Islam and the False Prophet Peter the 2nd's agenda had to occur.”

“The Sunnis leader made a bold statement, asserting that he had personally communicated with Mohammed?” John stated.

“This is surely the work of demons,” Enoch interjected, suspicion etched on his face. “They did not speak to Mohammed. Peter tricked the Sunnis leader, most likely. I do not know how, but they have done this before. Mauvad, you may recall that I mentioned this previously. Mohammed received a message, but it was not from Gabriel. It was Kasdeja, or Peter the 2nd, who approached him and started a conversation. With the unity of Islam, the Muslims, led by a figure resembling the Pope, will intensify their persecution of Christians globally. Kasdeja, his demon name, had to bridge the gap between the opposing sides to achieve his goals.”

“What are his goals, Enoch?” John asked.

“Their mission was to build a fresh, vibrant Church from scratch. By embracing Islam, he adds a layer of uncertainty for those who are deeply religious, questioning the true identity of Jesus. The Church is on the verge of making a shocking announcement - they are going to introduce a person possessed by a demonic spirit soon, whom they will declare as God. They will desecrate the sacred 'Jewish Temple' and proclaim the presence of God in our midst. The words I speak can be found within the sacred texts.”

“When can we expect this to take place?”

“Shortly John.”

“As you well know, Enoch, another issue is surfacing, casting a shadow over our current situation. The populations of the world's cities are voicing their discontent through protests aimed at you and Elijah. According to them, you are the ones responsible for causing this immense suffering. There are calls for the death of both you and Elijah. It seems that no corner of the world is untouched by the protest and riots, as they continue to spread with alarming speed.”

“Several of the complaints made by the protesters are undeniably valid. Yes, we are devout followers of Jesus, finding strength in our faith. We are taking strict measures against those who do not believe. Indeed, they despise us now and harbor a strong desire for our demise. The Antichrist is going to succeed in doing so, and darkness will engulf the world. The Bowls of Revelation will unleash the woes of earth, signaling the beginning of a tumultuous time. After we are gone, the non-believers will be left with no one but themselves to blame.”

“Enoch, we've been informed that tomorrow Pope Peter the 2nd is scheduled to hold a ceremony. According to press releases from Babylon, this ceremony is expected to unite Islam and the Catholic Church, creating a strong bond. It will be claimed by them that Jesus died and was merely regarded as a Prophet. In addition, they will insist that Mohammed is the true Prophet. According to the false church, Islam was supposedly bestowed upon humanity as a means to rectify the injustices caused by the Romans and Constantine.”

“John, there is no denying the absolute truth in this statement. Peter the 2nd, a sinister figure representing evil, will deceive the church by instructing them to preach from the Qur'an or a comparable text. The Bible is going to be banned, erasing an important piece of religious history. Those who oppose the Islamic Sunnis and Shiites bond and Christians who reject their teachings will face execution.”

“Will they meet their fate at the hands of the guillotine?”

“Yes, John, millions will be impacted. The possibility of it beginning tomorrow, alongside the Pope's speech, would not astonish me. According to scripture in the apostle John's Revelation, Christians who are executed during this time are set to be granted a special place directly beneath God's Throne. There is nothing to fear of this death, for it is a peaceful passing. Once a person is sealed in Christ, the worries and concerns of the world become insignificant. They may take your life, but they cannot extinguish your spirit and soul. Our physical form is fleeting and impermanent. In eternity, God is going to bless us with a new body that radiates glory.”

“Remember John,” Mauvad added, “unbelievers of the new Church and false god are to be beheaded. Killing in this manner is not something new. The Qur’an in Chapter 8, verse 12 states, and I quote.”

‘Remember thy Lord inspired the Angels with the message: I am with you give firmness to the believers: I will instill terror into the hearts of the unbelievers: smite ye above their necks and smite all their finger-tips off them.’

“This rationale within Islam permits the killing of individuals who practice different religions. Similar to the Qur'an, the Bible also depicts the Antichrist and False Prophet, who carry out brutal executions of Christians through beheading.”

“This is true John,” Enoch added. “The Bible describes the guillotines in the end times, found in Revelation 20, verse 4.”

‘Then I saw thrones and seated on them were those to whom the authority to judge was committed. Also, I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for the testimony of Jesus and for the Word of God, and those who had not worshiped the beast or its image and had not received its mark on their foreheads or their hands. They came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.’

“So, John, executions are the will of God; true Christians shall be martyred.”

“So sad Enoch.”

A wave of nausea washed over John, leaving him feeling queasy. He could feel the weight of the conversation pressing against his chest, suffocating him with every word spoken. He had to regain control of his emotions and compose himself. With a quick flick of his hand, John silently conveyed to Enil that they had to shut off the broadcast.

### Chapter 95

##### Brad Williams Reporting From The New Vatican

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### New Religion And Coronation Of Cain Part 1

O

nce the announcer completed the introductions, Brad began their special broadcast.

“Good afternoon, world; I am Brad Williams, Anchor of THE Network News, broadcasting live from New Babylon, Iraq. We are bringing you the unveiling of the Universal Church of the World and the blessing of the newly elected leader, of the ‘Alliance of the Ten’.”

“I am joined this afternoon with my co-anchors, Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan. It is a beautiful day in September. As you can see from our cameras, the modern Vatican built within New Babylon is similar to the one destroyed in Rome.”

“Many of you are unaware of the word Vatican's meaning. They derive the modern interpretation from two Latin words: Vatic and anus. They mean characteristic of a Prophets, oracular. From Latin, seer, or as it meant during Roman Times; Vatican City, the Imperial Seat of the Roman Caesars.”

“It is fitting that they decided to retain the name from Rome. The Vatican adds an element of excitement,” Catherine added with a smile. “Considered a Prophet by many, Peter the 2nd is believed to have been chosen by god to deliver important teachings. However, not the Christian God. The modern Vatican complex, aptly named after its historical significance, will now serve as the seat of the new ruler or Caesar. The press release they provided includes a detailed outline of the Pope's upcoming speech. He is proclaiming the establishment of a new religion, a fusion of Islam, Catholicism, and various other faiths, all united under the banner of the Universal Church. The clarification of one God, one Church brings an end to the wars over religious beliefs, promoting unity and peace. Henceforth, the Universal Church stands as a worldwide institution, uniting believers across the globe.”

“Religion,” Nancy said, “has been the cause of numerous conflicts throughout history. Islamic countries against Islamic countries; Protestant against Catholic, Christians against Jews. As of today, the era of armed conflicts officially comes to a close, bringing hope for a more peaceful future.”

“Today is the day they are crowning Robert Cain,” Brad announced eagerly, a smile spreading across his face. “Cains ceremony will closely resemble the ancient Roman Catholic Church rituals that were used to crown monarchs during the middle ages. Not only did they bring the Coronation stone they retrieved from Ireland, but they additionally carefully placed it on a velvet cushion for all to admire prior to the ceremony.”

“For our viewers,” Nancy said, “The Stone of Scone, Lia Fail, also goes by the name of The Stone of Destiny. People in England often refer to it as The Coronation Stone. This sacred stone is an oblong block of red sandstone used for centuries in the Coronation of the monarchs of Scotland; later the monarchs of England; then those of the United Kingdom. The cross has been scratched off, and in its place, a crescent moon with an eagle has been engraved onto the stone. On the monitor behind us, you can see a picture of the stone they gave us.”

The camera zoomed in, capturing every intricate detail of the modified Coronation Stone.

“To paint a vivid picture of today's ceremony, they are incorporating the ancient rituals and regal crowning of a world leader, reminiscent of the third-century traditions observed by Rome and the Church. They will be using a diadem, a majestic accessory also known as 'The Corona Radiata' or 'The Radiant Crown.' The crown, with its religious origin, holds the same significance as a halo, symbolizing the sacred nature of kingship and the belief that the king possesses divine authority. We possess an image of the crown, adorned with intricate jewels, that Cain will wear.”

The camera zoomed to the picture of the diadem as Brad continued.

“The first thing that catches your eye is the crown is crafted from pure gold and adorned with sparkling rubies, diamonds, and pearls. The front emblem features a Crescent Moon with a majestic Golden Eagle perched atop it. The eagle design on this emblem is reminiscent of the ancient Roman empire. Additionally, you may observe that the same symbol of the Crescent Moon, adorned with the eagle, is prominently displayed on the Church at the New Vatican. This symbol replaces the cross and the single crescent moon, commonly seen on churches representing both Christianity and Islam.”

“A pedestal has been set up in the courtyard,” Catherine added, “resembling the iconic St. Peter's Plaza. Now named St. Mohammed Plaza, the newly constructed courtyard, is adorned with vibrant flowers and elegant fountains.”

“On top of the pedestal, there are three grand thrones, each adorned with intricate carvings. The seats gleam with a golden hue, their surfaces intricately engraved. In the center stands the largest one, flanked by two smaller ones on either side. From under the thrones, there is a ruby red carpet that cascades down seven steps. The covering stretches seamlessly from one end of the square to the other. To ensure that visitors stayed off the carpet, they roped off the carpeted walkway.”

“You will also encounter trumpeters from the Roman era. The musical instruments they are using are called Cornu Horns, similar to the sound of a tuba. There are 24 of them, each emitting a distinct sound at specific intervals of the ceremony. 24 Rima Tubas accompany these trumpeters, their grandeur reminiscent of the majestic sounds heard in ancient Rome.”

“Flags representing the 'Alliance of Ten' are carefully draped over the instruments, adding a touch of patriotic flair. The flags they brandish are reminiscent of the ones that adorned Rome during 100 AD. They chose a rich, bold red hue for the flags, making slight modifications to create a distinct and eye-catching color. The flag symbols feature a Crescent Moon, adorned with the Diadem, and crowned with the embossed Roman Eagle. The displayed eagle symbol is a contemporary take on the traditional design. The redesigned eagle features smoother lines, a departure from the squared aesthetic look of Ancient Rome.”

“Today, Nancy announced, there will be a color guard. They will proudly don the new dress uniforms of the Alliance of Ten, showcasing their newly adopted colors. The colors they come in are red, gold, and blue. The pants and shirt are dark blue, with both the shirt and pants cuffs gold; the waistbands are gold; and the shoulder ropes are gold. The hats they wear are a vibrant shade of red, tilted at a jaunty angle. Each hat proudly displays a vivid image of a crescent moon and a majestic eagle. Just like the dress caps worn by United States soldiers, reminiscent of the World War II era. The dress hats gleam with gold trim and feature sleek black visors. They have been chosen to proudly carry the ten flags of the Ten Nations, with the vibrant new Alliance flag leading the way.”

It caught Brad's attention that everyone had formed a line, eagerly anticipating the start of the procession. Jonathan gave them a heads up. The ceremony was about to begin, and there was a palpable sense of anticipation in the air. As the Popemobile arrived, the crowd erupted in cheers and applause.

### Chapter 96

##### Building C, Vatican Museums

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### The Plan

N

ot sanctioned by the Israeli government, two Israelis smuggled a sniper gun into Babylon a week ago. They were living in a storage building, hidden in the rafters. The building had a direct view of the ceremony taking place today. They brought enough supplies to sustain them until the arrival of Cain. Arnie was an Israeli Olympic Gold Medal winner. He won in the 600-meter, military prone position rifle team, several years ago. His shot won the event for his crews shoot. Arnie and Sam were the grandchildren of holocaust survivors who saw in Cain and his regime what their grandparents described as they grew up in Germany. They decided to take matters into their own hands, determined to create their own destiny.

“Do you have a clear sight? “Samuel questioned, squinting to discern the distance.”

“Yes, Samuel I do. I can see the thrones and the steps clearly through the scope. It will be an easy shot.”

“Arnie, it may seem easy to you, but you can't afford to miss. It is imperative that we take his life. It needs to be a head shot. A direct hit on Cain will result in instant death.”

“Do you believe we can escape after we kill him, Samuel?”

“I have my doubts about that. Once they hear the shot, they will descend upon this building in the same way as a swarm of bees. There is a strong chance that someone is going to gun us down and we are going to die this very day. As we discussed before, this mission is like walking into the jaws of death.”

“Then we will meet our end,” Arnie replied, his voice filled with resignation.

“I am ready, my mind is focused, and my body poised for action. Taking this man's life is akin to having the chance to eliminate a figure of great infamy, like Hitler. Our grandparent's generation should have taken action and eliminated him when they had the opportunity. Our goal is to eradicate the monster threat before it reaches Israel.”

“Once they finish crowning him, you'll have a clear shot to take. During rehearsals, he was surrounded by an overwhelming crowd of people during the walk throughs. We know Cain is going to give a speech after the Coronation. When he does, this will be our perfect opportunity.”

Artie took a long drink of water from the canned water they had available from New Babylon. The water was refreshing to consume. The Wormwood Star had tainted the water outside of Israel, but the water from New Babylon was still cool and satisfying to drink.

Memories flooded Arnie's mind, transporting him back to the sights and sounds of his childhood home. 'The Temple' stood tall and majestic, a symbol of Israel's national pride and accomplishment. Many in Israel knew this man would soon invade their country, just as the Romans had done years ago, casting a shadow of fear and uncertainty. Perhaps his actions will be the catalyst for their invasion upon us. With unwavering confidence, Arnie knew he would not falter in his mission to end Cain's life today.

### Chapter 97

##### Mohammed Square, New Vatican

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Universal Religion, Coronation of Cain, Part II

A

fter the break, Brad began speaking while the cameras zoomed in on the anchor desk. “Good afternoon, world. I am Brad Williams, anchor of THE Network News, now broadcasting live from New Babylon, Iraq. We are continuing our coverage of the blessing of the Universal Church and the Coronation of the newly elected leader of the ‘Alliance of Ten’. I am joined this afternoon by Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan.”

“Our screen is split, allowing you to witness the vibrant color guard parading through the bustling crowd in Mohamed's Square, located at the New Vatican. As the guard makes their way forward, Pope Peter the 2nd has emerged, adorned in exquisite, hand-woven golden robes. The sight of his red velvet slippers, delicately embellished with gold trim, are catching everyone's attention. His tiara gleams with the brilliance of a three-tiered crown embellished with precious jewels. From 1305 through 1963, the Popes would wear this specific style of Tiara at Papal Coronations. Today, the Crown is being utilized once again, continuing its legacy. Among its notable features, the Tiara proudly showcases the 'Ten Alliance' with the addition of a crescent moon and eagle, making it all the more enchanting.”

“Next, we have Ayatollah Shahin Shasahvar, respected by Shiite Muslims, and Abbas Abu Laden, a revered leader of Sunni Muslims, continuing Abu Bakr al-Baghdadi's legacy. Following the religious leaders, the Diadem, a significant item for Cain's Coronation, gleams with ornate symbols and precious gemstones. The champion of the flag contest held by the Alliance proudly carries The Crown on a vibrant red pillow. His name is Mario Benedetti, from Italy. With the weight of Rome's destruction by Noelani on his shoulders, he carries the city's ruins in his memories. The first wave of destruction caused by the asteroid killed his parents, leaving him homeless. His life took a turn for the better when an Army officer welcomed him into their family.”

“After the bearer,” Catherine added, “we have Sir Jordan Devon, father of Robert Cain, in a military dress with the honorary title of Commander. This designation is complimentary to his Knighthood from England he received years ago. Priests from the Vatican followed closely behind him, their robes billowing in the wind. They are holding beautifully wrapped gifts, carefully chosen to be presented to Cain from the 'Ten Nations'. Among the gifts, there is a majestic scepter that he will proudly wield, accompanied by a historic sword from the renowned Cluny Museum in France. The sacred blade, known as the Joyeuse, has a storied history as the Coronation Sword of the Kings of France. The blade they created was an exceptional combination of fragments from swords spanning several centuries, from the 9th to the 18th. The weapon, with a history dating back to 1804, was last wielded during the Coronation of Napoleon Bonaparte.”

“As we follow the bearers,” Nancy said, “we become captivated by the boys' choir and their harmonious melodies echoing through the procession. They are a group of young women, their ages ranging from 12 to 16. They hail from all regions within the 'Alliance of Ten'. They are virgins; considered pure of heart, mind, and body. Once they reach their 17th birthday, they are obligated to leave.”

“The military follows the virgins. This includes all the top brass for each branch. Most are Americans. They include General David Stoups, Army; General Jerry Poloski, Air Force; Admiral Robert Parrish, Navy; Supreme Commander Joseph Raced, of the Marines.”

“They are followed by the leaders of ‘The Ten’ or their representatives. President Jamal Jones, from America; Yuan Kwan, Premier of China; Vladimir Leshev, President of the Russian Alliance; George Schmitt, Prime Minister of Germany; Mario DeEnbetti, President of Italy; Richard Weingart, English Prime Minister; Hamza Umbrine, Pakistan’s President; Tkuya Koto, Japan’s newly elected Prime Minister; then Gireesh Arya, President of India.”

“Following them are Aafre Waldger and Cardinal Richital. Aafre is an advisor of Cain’s and the ‘Alliance of Ten’s’, Federal Reserve Chairman. They model this part of the government after the now defunct Federal Reserve of the United States. Cardinal Richital is a spiritual adviser to the Pope.”

Brad and his co-anchors observed in awe as the procession of dignitaries made their way to the grand podium and seating sections before finally settling into their designated seats.

“The people are seated now,” Brad said. “The Pope is giving an opening statement. We will not see Robert Cain until he is summoned after the Pope’s speech.”

“ As I look, I see the Pope occupying the larger golden throne, with the two Muslim leaders positioned on either side,” Nancy observed. We can safely assume the Pope is at the forefront, with the other two serving as his trusted deputies.”

“I find it astounding,” Catherine added, “that the three of them reached a consensus. This is bound to be a fascinating encounter.”

With confidence, a priest approached the lectern set up on the pedestal, his voice projecting clearly as he gave the introduction.

“Today, we are gathered here to address and resolve the complex matters surrounding the world's diverse religions. Today, we must confront the web of deception that shrouds us, leaving no room for enigma. The Holy Men of the world’s major religions are gathered here today, their voices resonating with wisdom and compassion as they work to rectify the mistakes of history. We are gathered here today to put an end to the conflicts rooted in religious differences among nations and communities. Without any more delay, I introduce to you his Holiness, Pope Peter the Second.”

The unified group of spectators, including the two Islamic leaders and the onlookers outside the ropes, erupted in a cacophony of cheers and applause, prompting everyone to rise to their feet. Calming them down proved to be a challenge, requiring multiple tries. Peter used his hands, palms facing downward to gesture for people to locate their seats repeatedly. As they returned to their seats, the Pope smiled and began speaking.

“The moment for change has arrived, and it cannot be ignored. Our world is under siege, bombarded by the persistent spread of false religions. We are being attacked by the alien Witnesses, who are unrelenting in their pursuit. The leaders of the Jews have launched an assault on us, instilling a sense of danger and vulnerability. For two thousand years, we have been immersed in the teachings of a book authored by the Jewish community. These books are filled with deceitful fabrications. Nothing, but lies.”

“According to Jewish tradition, Isaac is considered the firstborn of Abraham and the recipient of his blessing. Through thorough research of the actual books of truth, we have confirmed that the claim made by the Jews is false.”

“When the Conclave elected me Pope, I made the decision to open the archives of the Vatican's library, driven by the need to uncover the truth on these matters. Our relentless pursuit of answers finally led us to the ultimate reality we were seeking. Essentially, facts are easy to understand. The Christian and Jewish stories are nothing but fabrications. Constantine created them with the intention of controlling the masses and instilling fear in humanity for almost two millennia.”

“In the documents we unearthed, hidden from sight for 2,000 years, there is a detailed description of this man named Jesus, who is fervently followed by Christians. Yes, he existed. Sadly, for my Christian friends, his life did not end on the cross. Jesus, revered by many, was considered to be only, a Prophet. Eventually, like all men, Jesus reached his final days.”

“In an effort to counteract the influence of this fabricated faith, the true deity dispatched his angel Gabriel to Mohammed in 610 AD. The truth was bestowed upon Mohammed, a man who lacked the ability to write and was solely a warrior. Mohammed's personal account offers valuable insights into his experience, which can be summarized as follows:”

‘When I was midway on the mountain, I heard a voice from Heaven saying O Muhammad! You are the apostle of Allah, and I am Gabriel. I raised my head toward Heaven to see who was speaking, and Gabriel in the form of a man with feet astride the horizon, saying, O Muhammad! You are the apostle of Allah, and I am Gabriel. I stood gazing at him moving neither forward nor backward, then I began to turn my face away from him, but toward whatever region of the sky I looked, I saw him as before.’

“From this moment forward, we were blessed with the divine words of the Qur'an. These scriptures depict our real God or Allah.”

“While working with others searching the archives, we came to realize that every religion had its flaws and hidden truths. Men seeking power would sometimes alter scripture for their own gain. This occurred in various religions, such as Christianity, Buddhism, Hinduism, and Islam.”

“In the past few years since I ascended to the position of Pope, we have diligently strived to unveil the true essence of reality.”

“The Christians got a few things right, but there were still some inaccuracies. Muslims have their own unique beliefs that align with certain aspects of spirituality, while those who believe in reincarnation have their own valid perspectives as well. However, the fascinating tales of the earth's creation and its gods were never shared with us. Today, we unveiled the new Universal Church, a magnificent structure that towered above the city skyline. Soon, the Church will experience the arrival of the true deity who will claim the throne I currently hold. Soon, we will unveil him to you, and you will finally see his true identity. Not today, but he is set to soon emerge from the shadows and make his presence known to the world.”

“We are introducing a new sacred text, meant to complement and expand upon the teachings of the Qur'an and the Bible. The name of this divine book is God, a simple yet powerful title. Get ready to immerse yourself in the tangible details of the actual story of creation as you read this book. The genuine account of how the earth, a magnificent jewel amidst the vastness of the universe, came into existence. Soon, this book will be available to everyone, no matter where they are in the world, completely free of charge.”

“This book is a collaboration between Islamic leaders, myself, my staff, and the historian, Doctor Otto Ottenberg, who brings a wealth of knowledge and expertise. His enlightening books were a result of his interpretation of ancient Sumerian Tablets. This new book titled God will provide a comprehensive guide on what actions to avoid and what actions to take, much like the Ten Commandments.”

“The most important commandment is to refrain from criticizing God, as it is considered deeply disrespectful. The second is to disregard false Prophets of imaginary deities, specifically Christians and adherents of Judaism.”

“The third step is to foster a community of devout individuals who are passionate about defending their faith. This means that it is your responsibility to eradicate any non-believers among your groups. The fourth stage involves developing a deep love for your Church and eagerly anticipating the revelation of your god.”

“In addition to not eating pork, there are numerous other dietary restrictions to consider. Make it a daily habit to communicate with God through prayer. Not following through with this action carries the ultimate penalty: death.”

“Within the fresh pages of this latest publication, there is a wealth of truth waiting to be discovered. We have carefully selected ordained priests from both Islam and Catholicism who not only accept but also wholeheartedly believe in the story of the new book. They shall scatter out into the world, their voices carrying the message of your modern religion, finally grounded in truth.”

“Today, we find ourselves faced with yet another task that needs our attention. We are to crown Robert Cain, son of Sir Robert Devon Jordan, as the head of the prestigious 'Alliance of Ten'. The ceremony will be conducted in the same manner as the Church did in the past, with reverence and tradition. At this moment, I summon Robert Cain to join us, a man of humility and deserving of this esteemed accolade.”

The boys' choir then began singing, their voices filling the air with the beautiful melody of Veni Creator Spiritus. In order to align with the new Church's beliefs, they made adjustments to certain words. This is the same song that resonated through the halls during Napoleon's Coronation. The courtyard erupted with the resounding blast of seven trumpets as Robert Cain made his grand entrance in a white chariot, drawn by six majestic black Arabian horses. Cain's attire consisted of a resplendent white satin tunic, adorned with golden thread, that caught the light with every movement.

Aides carefully placed the Coronation mantle on Cain's shoulders as he stepped out of the chariot, marking the beginning of his reign. Aides followed behind him, carefully carrying the Coronation mantel, reminiscent of the one used during Napoleon's Coronation. The mantel, with a weight of around ninety pounds, requires careful handling. They crafted the mantel using rich crimson velvet, its luxurious texture complemented by a smooth silk lining. The velvet was adorned with intricate golden eagles and symbols, bringing to mind the ancient Egyptian pyramids. With each step, Cain wearing the sandals of a warrior from ancient Rome left imprints on the carpet, symbolizing his strength and bravery. Preceding him was a man holding a staff, its top embellished with the half-moon and eagle, creating an aura of authority.

In the courtyard, the air was filled with the deafening roar of cheers, screams, and applause. As he walked the red carpet of the square, the guest could feel the eyes of the crowd on him and hear their applause. Upon reaching the stairs, he humbly knelt before the Pope. The spectators settled back into their seats, the hush of silence falling over the crowd. The Pope began the ceremony.

“Sir Robert Cain, with a humble demeanor, has approached us to be crowned the leader of the 'Alliance of Ten'. Please answer the questions I shall ask of you honestly, providing us with a clear understanding of your qualifications for this position.”

With a gesture, the Pope signaled to the altar server, who rushed to fetch the new holy book, God, and bring it to the altar. Holding the book of god, the altar server stood before Peter the 2nd, his presence commanding reverence. As the server held the book, Peter opened it to the right page, finding himself immersed in the words on the crisp paper. As he raised his arms, he began reading from the book, his voice resonating with passion.

“Robert Cain, are you of a good heart?”

“Yes, your holiness.”

“Robert Cain, do you believe in the Universal World Church, unveiled here today?”

“Yes, I do.”

“Robert Cain, will you follow and hold true the laws and constitution of the Alliance?”

“Yes, I will.”

“Robert Cain, do you feel you can hold this title?”

“Yes, I do.”

“Robert Cain, do you promise to defend the ‘Alliance of Ten’ with your life?

“Yes, I do.”

From another altar person, The Pope took a ram’s horn filled with holy oil, held it high with both hands for all to see, then lowered it as he looked at Cain.

“In the name of God and all his servants on earth and the universe, I declare Robert Cain as the first leader of the world.”

With a sense of solemnity, Peter poured the oil meticulously and deliberately over Robert Cain's head.

With confidence, Peter handed the ram's horn back to the altar person and then seized the sword from the hands of another server. With both hands open, he held the gleaming sword, feeling its weight and power. In his hands, he held the handle and the blade, feeling the weight of the weapon and the power it possessed.

“Robert Cain, extend your arms and firmly grasp the sword of destiny that lies before you.”

With his hands outstretched and still in a kneeling position, Cain accepted the sword handed to him by the Pope.

“This sword is of many. It represents the quest for freedom against tyranny. Do you, Robert Cain, accept this sword and its destiny to be as yours?”

“Yes, I do.”

With a gesture, the Pope directed his attention to the crowd and instructed them to bow their heads for prayer. Demonstrating his holy power, he delicately placed his hands over Cain's head.

“Let the divine forces of God and the Angels bestow their blessings upon Robert Cain, assisting him as he navigates through the trials that confront us mortals. Grant him the fortitude to guide humanity towards a deeper comprehension of you and the vastness of the cosmos. Lead him towards peace, preventing the outbreak of war.”

After offering the blessing of Cain, the Pope lifted his hands away and turned to accept the Golden Diadem from another altar server. He meticulously positioned the Crown on the head of Robert Cain, ensuring it sat flawlessly. Once finished, he then addressed the still kneeling Cain.

“From this day forward, Robert Cain, you and you alone bear the weight of leadership as the head of both the Alliance of Ten and the entire planet. Rise and extend a warm greeting to those under your care. The whole earth, with its vast landscapes and endless possibilities, is now your responsibility. A golden crown adorns your head, gleaming in the light of hope for humanity. Long live our leader!”

With the audience's shouts echoing in the background, Robert Cain stood and turned to face them with assurance.

“Hail to Cain, Hail to Cain,” echoed through the crowd, their voices filled with reverence and admiration for their leader.

### Chapter 98

##### Storage Building C, Vatican Museums

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Fulfilling Prophecy

A

rnie saw Cain rise with the crown on his head. Cain's appearance was reminiscent of a pagan God from antiquity, evoking the image of Nero himself. With today's actions, Arnie knew that Rome had risen from the ashes, bringing a renewed sense of grandeur and power. A wave of anger washed over him, intense and overpowering. The hairs on the back of his neck stood up as he sensed the malevolence emanating from this man. Arnie peered through his scope, his eyes focusing on the distant target. Cain stood there, his defenses lowered, and vulnerable. He knew his accuracy was unparalleled; he never failed to hit his target.

With a steady hand, Arnie slowly squeezed the M24, the click of the trigger echoing in the silence. As the recoil hit his shoulder, he could feel the powerful kickback of the 7.62×51mm NATO short-action cartridge, just milliseconds away. Arnie watched through the scope, and he could hear the distant echo of his shot reverberating through the air. Cain's head jolted backwards as an explosive shell tore through the left side of his skull.

The sight of blood was overpowering, as it coated every inch of the pedestal and altar, creating a gruesome scene. The Pope, the two Islamic leaders, and the attendants on the platform were all splattered in crimson spots from the wound. As he fell to the ground, blood trickled from his head, staining the stage.

“Arnie let’s go,” Samuel shouted!

With a loud clatter, Arnie dropped his rifle on the rafters, causing dust to swirl in the air. He stealthily trailed Samuel, moving silently from the rafters of the roof to the steps leading to the main floor. They reached the main floor just in time to see the doors burst open, flooding the room with bright light. The soldiers opened fire, causing bullets to zip through the air and filling the area with the pungent scent of gunpowder. The bullets violently struck Arnie's body as they entered his chest and penetrated his head. With a smile on his face, Arnie hit the ground, his mind filled with a single final thought. There was no doubt about it - he had taken Cain’s life.

### Chapter 99

##### Brad Williams Reporting

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### The Assassination Of Robert Cain

A

mong the people on the anchor desk, Catherine was the quickest to react. Her voice echoed through the room as she screamed, “Oh my God, they killed him!” As the dignitaries cleared the stage, their cameras continued to roll, capturing every moment. The sight of paramedics huddled around Cain's motionless form sent a shiver down her spine. With urgency, they applied the defibrillator to his chest, hoping to bring him back to life. Their eyes were drawn to the electric heart paddles and the sudden jerking motion of his body. Brad's voice was barely above a whisper as he delivered the statement they had been fearing.

“It appears Robert Cain has been assassinated. For our viewers, we will replay in slow speed the exact sequence of events.”

As they showed the replay, Brad's gaze shifted towards the monitor. As if time had slowed down, the bullet connected with Cain's left temple area, causing a sudden and violent reaction. The left side of his skull exploded, leaving behind a gaping hole. The replay booth froze the frame, capturing the moment of impact just before Cain crumpled to the ground.

“As you can see from our freeze frame,” Brad pointed out, “Robert Cain's left side and back of his head are severely damaged. The frozen frame reveals a surprising detail - what appears to be brain matter is observable in the cloud near his head. Currently, there is no confirmed report of death. Based on our observations, I truly believe that Robert Cain is no longer alive.”

Their eyes were fixed on their monitor, capturing the moment paramedics gently placed Cain's lifeless body onto a gurney. With a solemn gesture, the paramedic positioned a sheet over his head, shielding the world from the sight of death. The paramedics carefully rolled the limp corpse out to the waiting ambulance and gently placed Cain's body inside. Making his way over to one of THE Network's reporters, Sir Jordan Devon, Cain's father, obliged our request. Betty, who had been conducting interviews with spectators near the podium, found herself face-to-face with him.

“Sir Devon, is there anything you would like to say?” the reporter asked, microphone in hand.

As he leaned toward the mic, his voice grew louder and more commanding.

“Tragically, my son, Robert Cain, has been mercilessly taken by an assassin. We are solemnly transferring Cain to our mortuary near here. Rest assured, we'll provide you with timely updates on the unfolding events to follow”

As Jordan walked away from Betty, he made his way toward the ambulance, stepping into the back with Cain.

“Today is a sorrowful day for the world,” Betty said, her voice filled with heaviness and sadness.

Brad's eyes darted between Nancy and Catherine, carefully studying their facial expressions. Their tear-filled eyes reflected the intensity of their emotions. As he looked at them, memories of Walter Cronkite's somber tone and iconic gesture flooded his mind, bringing back a sense of unwanted nostalgia.

“We need to take a break,” he announced, the weariness evident in his voice.

### Chapter 100

##### Conference Room

##### Eden II

##### The False Prophet

A

s THE Network broke for a commercial break, John turned to Enoch and inquired, “is this the exact moment when Satan and the False Prophets are granted the extraordinary ability to heal the sick and even bring the deceased back to life? Is this a unique occurrence?”

“John, I want to acknowledge that your statement is indeed accurate. The plan is to have a performance where they will stage his resurrection from the dead. When they do, Cain won't be half god and half human anymore. He is going to take after both his father and the Fallen, displaying their traits. Once he is resurrected, his powers will experience a significant increase within his new body.”

“Is there a likelihood that he will undergo any noticeable changes in his appearance?”

“I have mixed feelings about it, as there are both positive and negative aspects to consider. As time passes, he is going to start resembling the infamous ancient ruler known as Nero more and more. However, his identity won't change, and he'll still be referred to as Cain. When you closely examine the statues of Nero, you'll observe a striking resemblance between him and Cain. In his new physical form, Cain is going to bear a resemblance to Nero, with added elements of Middle Eastern influence. One of the reasons John chose to use the numbers 666 when writing Revelation, is to convey this message. The meaning of this is equivalent to Nero's name. When written in Aramaic, the value of 666 corresponds to the Hebrew numerology system of gematria.”

“I'm curious, is he Nero?”

“Indeed, he embodied Nero and numerous others. You may need to remember, The 200 have been here since the beginning of creation. Now, the False Prophet will mend Cain’s wound on a worldwide broadcast for all to see as they raise him from the dead. As scripture states, the world shall wonder, asking who can defeat him? He will restore health to sick people and empower others who are crippled to walk, give sight to the blind and more. He will then declare himself, God.”

“When will they raise him? Today is Friday.”

“Sunday morning. The demons of the world and Satan are following in the footsteps of Christ. By following the same scenario of Jesus, their actions are going to deceive many.”

“Enoch, why is God granting him this power?” President Stevenson asked. “I am having difficulty understanding why.”

“Their short-lived power is a test, President Stevenson. God is providing Satan all the space he requires, or as the saying goes, enough rope to hang himself and those who follow him. Now you understand why he is called the Antichrist. The exact opposite of Jesus! Son of Lucifer, Satan the serpent! And as far as Lucifer goes or Morningstar, this is a name he assigned himself. The name Lucifer is generally associated with King Nebuchadnezzar. However, Lucifer stuck and, of course, currently he uses Sir Jordan Devon. Translated, this means evil one from down under.”

“Should we broadcast, exposing their impending fraud and telling the people the real story? Enil asked.

“No. Let the masses be deceived by their trickery... we will repudiate Cain’s resurrection at a later time. Soon, you will experience another resurrection. This time, the two resurrected men will rise to Heaven. The whole world is going to witness it. Of course, I am speaking of me and Elijah. Afterwards, you are going to have a story to tell repeatedly of God’s grace, through his son Jesus. After our resurrection, those still alive on Earth will feel the wrath of the seven bowls of plagues. People will recognize Jesus as God's only Son. Unfortunately, Enil, it will be too late for most individuals to receive salvation from Jesus. Many already accepted, ‘The Mark of the Beast’.”

“There are a lot still preaching a rapture,” Marks said. “Is there a mid-Tribulation rapture when you and Elijah are taken up?” he asked eagerly.

His response was firm and resolute.

“No!”

“The occurrence of what they are wishing for happens when the Seventh Trumpet is sounded. On that particular day, Christ will make his return and bring about the destruction of the armies led by the Antichrist. Until that moment arrives, Eden II is determined to rescue and protect as many individuals as they can by disseminating the truth globally.”

“For now,” Enil inquired, “I suppose we will continue with our regular schedule of daytime TV, with our group.”

“Yes,” replied John in response to the question. “During this period, our focus will be on closely monitoring the development of Cain's resurrection. There will be a significant amount of pageantry at the event. Please be aware that the airing will be hosted by THE Network, not by our organization. Our team has decided to free up the airwaves and make them available for their use. Once their ceremony concludes, we intend to proceed to broadcast our comments.”

### Chapter 101

##### Robert Cain’s Office, Nebuchadnezzar Tower

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Funeral Plans

L

ucifer asked Cardinal Richital, “Are the plans in order for THE Network to broadcast the funeral of Cain?”

“Yes, Sir Devon,” he answered, acknowledging his authority.

“No one has leaked what will happen during this ceremony?”

“No one. Despite their likely awareness, Eden II has chosen to stay silent about what is to occur.”

Sir Jordan turned his gaze towards Pope Peter, his eyes filled with anticipation.

“If I'm not mistaken, you have the ancient book needed for the resurrection of Cain, don't you?”

“Yes, we have made all the necessary preparations, and we are fully prepared for the task at hand. The broadcast is scheduled to begin promptly at 8:00 a.m. on Sunday morning. It is on this particular day that my words shall unveil your true identity to the entire world. The plan is for us to recite the chant together, you and I. The two Islamic leaders, who are eager to be involved, have been included in the event. Globally, it presents a front that is unified in its religious beliefs.”

“Peter, that is indeed a good idea. The incredible miracle that we are about to perform will grant us the power to control the thoughts and minds of all humanity. The power of the Church, myself, and my son Cain will leave every person alive in awe and wonder. It won't be long before the Council and Jesus face defeat. Our objective is to demonstrate to the Council the inherent corruption within humanity and argue that its creation was a mistake.”

“It is only a matter of time until they acknowledge and rectify their misguided actions.” Peter the false pope said.

### Chapter 102

##### THE Network’s Live Broadcast. Funeral for Robert Cain

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Power of Demons

T

he announcer began, “People of the world, today we have a Special Report, from THE Network, live from New Babylon, with your host Brad Williams.”

“Good morning world, I am Brad Williams, anchor for THE Network News, broadcasting live from the Vatican’s Universal Cathedral, in New Babylon, Iraq. We are beginning our coverage of the funeral for Robert Cain. I am joined this morning by Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan.”

“Our broadcast originates from a booth that is located on the upper level of the church. The presence of a split screen makes it clear that Robert is not inside a casket, as you can see for yourself. They gently arranged his body on the altar, ensuring it was displayed prominently. He is wearing a complete military dress uniform, which includes all the necessary components and accessories. In a pose that symbolizes death, his arms are positioned at his side while one hand rests over the other on his waist. The royal Diadem, a symbol of power and authority, has been ceremoniously placed upon his majestic head.”

“His head wound was left exposed by the funeral home. The wound is clearly visible, with its raw, red edges. The area is clean, but the lack of hair on the side and back of his head is still apparent. The reason for leaving Cain's head wound uncovered is unknown to us. We believe that by exhibiting his trauma, it serves as a reminder to people of the cruelty behind the assassination.”

“Authorities identified the assassins,” Nancy said, her eyebrows furrowing in concern. “The individuals in question originated from the city of Jerusalem. One of them was a Rabbi, while the other had been trained as an assassin in the IDF. The government of Israel has made it clear that they are unaware of the reasons behind the travel of these two individuals to Babylon and their subsequent assassination of Cain. The Prime Minister delivered a statement in which they mentioned that they are currently conducting an investigation into the alleged shooters, as well as their families and backgrounds. The information we have gathered indicates that the shooter was a former Gold Medal winner in the Olympics several years ago.”

“A spokesperson from the ‘Alliance of Ten’ stated,” Catherine said, “they do not believe Israel's innocence and claim they are definitely responsible.”

“I agree with the ‘Alliance of Ten, Catherine,” Brad added. “Both the newly elected Pope and leaders of the Islamic faith came together to criticize and label Judaism as a religion based on false teachings. It is possible that the assassination was carried out as a means of expressing their disagreement with the pope's views.”

“If Israel is truly responsible, then I am sure there will soon be a response by the Alliance,” Nancy suggested. “What is your opinion, Brad?”

“I completely agree with you, Nancy. As of now, there has been no statement or implication made. In light of the current situation, it is imperative to recognize the significance of the funeral, placing it above any political considerations. The matter regarding Israel can be handled at a later time.”

“Brad, the Chapel is at capacity and Mohammed Square is packed with people, watching from jumbotrons,” Catherine said. “The time for Cain's ceremony to commence is drawing near, and we are just moments away from starting. We want to inform our viewers that the ceremony will resemble a Catholic funeral mass for their knowledge and understanding. The main difference lies in the fact that there is no distribution of communion during this time. The occasion will commence with a procession, followed by a prayer. Following the prayer, an enchanting song will be performed by the talented American pop star Melissa Albright, hailing from the vibrant city of Detroit, Michigan. The title given to this piece is 'How Great Thou Art,' beautifully encapsulating the message it conveys. Handel's Messiah has been selected to be performed during the opening procession of music. The music for the event will be performed by The New Babylon Orchestra. We invite you to join us in watching and listen.”

As the conductor rose from her seat, the orchestra immediately began playing the symphony. Dressed in a vibrant red robe and adorned with a newly acquired tiara, Pope Peter the 2nd made his way down the aisle, holding a lit thurible in his hands. As he made his way down the aisle, he swung it from left to right in a rhythmic motion. Following closely behind him, the two Islamic leaders walked. They too had incense containers, moving them left to right. Sir Devon Jordan emerged from behind them, gripping a large and bulky book. The dimensions of the book were 3 feet in height and 2 feet in width. The item in question appeared to be well worn, with a thickness of approximately 4 inches. In a remarkable display of strength and determination, he managed to hold it high above his head.

A group of young girls, with woven baskets in hand, followed closely behind them and distributed tulips to the seated individuals. Positioned behind them were the Ten Leaders of the Alliance, representing their collective strength. In addition to the members of Cain's advisory committee, there were also others who followed him, including his friends. The total count of them is 190. The majority of attendees at the meeting were industrialists and leaders from various countries within the Ten. They filled up the reserved seats using the front pews.

The symphony came to its conclusion while the Pope and two Islamic leaders, were seated together in the opulent golden chairs that had been specially brought for the Coronation. They watched as Melissa Albright, the guest soloist, confidently walked up to the lectern. She gracefully started singing the powerful hymn, 'How Great Thou Art', while the orchestra skillfully played alongside her.

After she completed her task, Pope Peter the 2nd stood up and made his way towards the body of Cain, holding the incense container. While waving the smoke around the area, he proceeded to walk around the body a total of three times. The thurible was given to Shahin by Peter. As the Pope, he proceeded to repeat the steps. The incense was presented to Abbas by him. Like the others, he also went through the steps once more. Following that, Peter the 2nd calmly walked past the lifeless body and approached the lectern.

“We invite everyone to join us in prayer.”

“We humbly beseech the Universal Leader of the World to cast their merciful gaze upon our humble souls on this day. The individual who is lying on your altar happens to be the offspring of the ruler of the earth, commonly referred to as the Morning Star. Bestow upon him and our Church the power to bring relief to the immense pain endured by countless individuals. We humbly ask that you grant us the same authority you possess, so that we may heal Cain's wounds and ensure that his legacy endures for all time. Amen.”

After completing his duties, the Pope gracefully made his way back to his opulent golden chair.

“Are they going to raise Cain from the dead?” Nancy whispered.

“Be quiet, Nancy,” Brad said.

Sir Jordan Devon, also known as the Morning Star, made his way from the front pew and confidently approached the podium. He carefully positioned a remote headphone microphone on top of his head. The distinguished Sir Jordan solemnly walked towards the altar where his beloved son's lifeless body was laid out. Lucifer looked quite dashing in his black suit, complemented by the addition of a scarlet red cape draping elegantly over his shoulders. With his reddish tie and cuffed sleeves adorned with gold cufflinks, he presented a stylish and sophisticated appearance. Around his neck, he proudly displayed a chain made entirely of solid gold. It was clear that the chain consisted of characters representing different animals, adding to its unique and diverse nature. Turning to the audience and cameras, he proceeded to speak.

“The one who rests on this altar is none other than my son, Cain. On the day of his Coronation, he was shot by an Israeli individual. As you can see, the entire back of his head exploded. The second the incident occurred, he lost his life instantly.”

Taking a moment to gather his thoughts, he paused and directed his gaze towards his son.

“Unfortunately, his mother is not able to be present here today. It has been an exceptionally long time since she passed away.”

“The Jews, through their fictional writings of their history, portrayed him in a negative light. According to their account, Cain committed the act of killing his brother Abel without any apparent motive. Cain murdered him due to Abel's overwhelming envy towards Cain, who possessed both divine and human lineage. Due to his inability to control his jealousy, Able found himself constantly envious of Cain. Adam, who was Cain's human stepfather, persistently contributed to his anger by reminding him that as a half-human, he was inferior to the angels, which led to tension between Abel and Cain. He indicated he was lower than the animals which inhabited the earth. For an extended period of time, Cain had to endure the anger of his stepfather.”

“At some point, the gods decided to reject Cain's offering of fruits and vegetables that he had grown in his fields. The only sacrifice they accepted was the slain ram presented by Abel. The intention behind this action was to deliberately slight Cain. The half-brothers found themselves engaged in a fierce argument. Adam, filled with pent-up anger towards Cain, deliberately provoked Able by instructing him to physically confront his older half-brother. Cain took it upon himself to defend his actions. With the use of a rock, he mercilessly crushed his half-brother's skull, resulting in his untimely demise.”

“In front of the Council of Gods, I stood up and defended Cain, expressing my support for him. In the past, I had the privilege of being a member of their Council. In the trial, it was Michael, the angel, who took on the role of the prosecutor. The names he used were the exact same names that he had used previously when I was brought before the Council due to the incident involving Cain's mother. His words were cruel, as he not only called me Satan but also labeled me a Serpent.”

“The Council ultimately reached a consensus that permitted me to take Cain away. Prior to their actions, they branded him as a traitor. They altered the color of his skin to match mine, which is commonly referred to as Caucasian. The color of his eyes changed from black, which he inherited from his mother to a vibrant blue, similar to mine. His hair, which is black, he takes after his mother's black hair. It was then declared by them that he, just like you, referring to myself, is someone who has shown a lack of regard for the rules put in place by the Council. Eden has permanently banned him as you have been, and he will never be allowed back.”

“As his father, I made the decision to take him away and be by my side after the trial. Indeed, I am the individual commonly referred to as Lucifer, recognized as the Morningstar.”

After he paused for a moment, the audience in the chapel responded with audible gasps that could be clearly heard.

“I, along with a team of individuals, had the responsibility of creating the earth. We, together with my fellow gods. A total of 600 gods made the journey to Earth. A disagreement caused a division among the members of our group. A team and I of two hundred angels decided to rebel against the Councils due to their unreasonable demands placed upon us, as well as their mistreatment of humans.”

“Shortly following the altercation between Cain and his half-brother, we emerged victorious in our battle against the other gods, who, like us, had journeyed to earth from heaven. After we chased them away from the earth, they have never returned, except for the sole purpose of causing destruction to our planet. Engaging in this activity is their primary occupation. The objective is to create devastation, take lives, inflict harm, and incite discord.”

“For thousands of years, Cain, a group of 200 angels and myself, have collectively nurtured humanity. There was a period in history when the earth boasted cities that were as advanced and contemporary as the ones we see in the present day.”

“The Council grew angry after witnessing the magnificent world that we had been constructing. In an audacious attempt, they aimed to annihilate the planet by unleashing a catastrophic flood. From their strategically positioned command center named New Jerusalem, located above the earth's surface, they meticulously orchestrated a series of asteroid redirections, ultimately causing massive tsunamis and resulting in extensive flooding across the entire globe. Due to the abundance of moisture in the atmosphere, it rained continuously for a duration of forty days and nights, resulting in the submersion of all land under a vast expanse of water. All the hard work and effort we put into building something was completely destroyed by them.”

“Before the occurrence of the flood, I made preparations for a single human family to find shelter and reside. By taking action, I was able to save numerous animals that inhabit the earth. The name he was known by was Gilgamesh, not Noah. While in exile in Babylon, the Jews manipulated the true narrative to their advantage. Without shame, they directly plagiarized several of our stories, making superficial changes to the names to match their own narratives. This explains why their stories don't align with archeological findings and scholars have dismissed their writings as mere mythology.”

“From Gilgamesh and his family with the 200, we repopulated the world. We created new cities similar to Babylon today. Regrettably, our city fell victim to their destructive forces. The Jews call it the story of Babel, which is fiction.”

“Following that, their next endeavor involved attempting to engineer a new population by selecting a man called Abraham from Ur. His firstborn child was named Ishmael. And the story of the sacrifice was with him, not Issac. Issac, who was a new creation, was the origin of the Jewish people as he was placed in the womb of Sarah. As you are aware and can clearly observe, their characteristics distinguish them from all other ethnicities on the planet.”

“After that, Abraham was used to bring about the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, two of the most magnificent cities ever constructed. The devastation was caused by a nuclear weapon that was launched from space, completely obliterating it.”

“Subsequently, they brought another person into existence, and they named him Moses. Today, these Witnesses are attempting to do what they once tried in Egypt - to destroy the known world. It appeared as if they were on the brink of success, but just fell short.”

“From the Heavens, they dispatched yet another emissary to earth. He was named Jesus. He was sent to disturb the balance of the planet, just like the two Witnesses who are causing unrest as they roam the world. The vital essence left Jesus, and he passed away. He was buried, and he was gone. Once again, the Jews created imaginative tales about this man, Jesus, in their fictional texts. There was no supernatural event that brought him back to life. No, he did not ascend into Heaven.”

“In our attempt to set the record straight, we sought the help of Mohammed, a descendant of Ishmael. We told him the truth. They, as the 200, are now telling the truth to humanity. In the new book, GOD, you can find all these stories of the 200, Gilgamesh, Ishmael, and Mohammed, each with their own unique narratives and perspectives.”

“Once again, they have dispatched emissaries to the world with the sole intention of obliterating us. These two Witnesses have caused the deaths of more than 1.5 billion individuals, leaving a trail of devastation in their wake. My heart aches now, for they have taken my beloved son Cain from me, orchestrating it through the hands of the Jews.”

“Here, on this solemn day, my son lies upon the hallowed altar of the true Church. Similar to Jesus, he met his demise at the hands of the Jewish community. Unlike Jesus, Cain shall rise today from the dead, defeating death. He resides in the darkest depths of Hell, where screams echo through the fiery corridors. From this place, I am going to liberate him and reinstate him to his rightful position of greatness. He is then set to defeat all adversaries who dare to claim dominion over our beloved earth.”

“The destroyers responsible for annihilating most of humanity in the past have plans to return and engage us in battle once more. Their hunger for power and control over the earth resurfaces as so many times in the past. Once again, they will face defeat and be banished from the world forever.”

“My son Cain will take charge this time, leading the world in the upcoming battle against them here on earth. He will obliterate those who continue to propagate the wickedness of the former gods, whose presence once plagued the planet earth. It is him who will finally put an end to the reign of terror caused by humanity's mass murderers. Cain will be our god, revered and worshipped by all who witness his extraordinary power.”

Taking a moment to heighten the anticipation, Lucifer's eyes carefully surveyed the audience and cameras before resuming.

“While we collectively sit here, captivated and questioning my words, a multitude of people are inquisitive about how a man, lacking a portion of his brain, can assume leadership once more. On this very day, in front of the entire world, I will solemnly pass on the reigns of the earth and the universe to my son, granting him ultimate power and authority for all eternity. He alone will be the conqueror of the planet. Not only will he heal the sick, but he will also perform miracles by allowing the lame to walk again. With the restoration of sight to the blind, he is destined to not only eternally rule the world but also ensure fairness in all aspects.”

“In contrast to the alleged secret resurrection of Jesus, today you will witness me and Pope Peter the 2nd boldly defy death. Every person's eyes will see the power we hold over death. In contrast to the deceased Jesus, Cain shall be brought back to life once more.”

“Behold, people of the world, as the gods manifest their extraordinary powers and astonish you with their incredible wonders, unfolding right before your very eyes.”

Lucifer looked at Peter the 2nd.

“Bring the book of the dead to me and the two clerics with yourself.”

The Pope, along with the two Islamic priests, rose from their seats, carefully lifted the book, and proceeded to make their way towards the left side of the altar, where Cain's body rested. Positioned near the head of Cain, the Pope stood, flanked by Islamic leaders on both his left and right sides.

“I will be the one to hold the book,” Lucifer firmly stated, emphasizing his role in taking care of the book.

With a firm grip, he raised the book high in the air so that everyone in the room could see it. The book, which was of ancient origin, had been carefully crafted using leather material and adorned with intricate engravings of symbols. With a swift motion, Lucifer unfastened the clasp that held the book closed. Quickly, he turned to a section positioned closer to the middle portion. Employing both of his hands, he made a deliberate gesture to present the book to the Pope. With a firm grip, he managed to hold the massive tome steady, ensuring that the Pope had a clear view.

“Kasdeja, I kindly request you recite the sacred text.”

“Did you hear what he called the Pope?” Nancy asked.

“Shh,” Brad said, “we are in a serious ceremony.”

Kasdeja began to read. While reading aloud from the book, he spoke in a language that not a single word could be comprehended by anyone present. The dialect that was being spoken was of an origin that was completely unknown. While reading out loud, he positioned his hands, which were ten inches apart, above Cain's head. It was during that specific moment that the miracle occurred, bringing about a profound transformation. The hole in Cain's skull started closing.

Kasdeja kept speaking…

In a remarkable display of supernatural power, Cain's lifeless body ascended from the table, elevating itself by ten inches. The rigidity of Cain's body has not changed since it was lying flat on the altar.

Kasdeja kept reading as the body of Cain lifted higher. As they looked closely, they could see the new hair growth covering the old wound, indicating that it had healed.

Suddenly, dark smoke billowed out from Cain's body, coiling upward towards the ceiling that was tainted with the pungent smell of sulfur. As the smoke gradually emanated from his body, it engulfed the entire upper area of the Chapel, creating a surreal atmosphere. Shockingly, his clothes stayed undamaged, despite the intense heat. Ignoring the unmistakable stench of sulfur, Lucifer, the Pope, and the two Priests carried on with their ceremony. As Kasdeja proceeded with his reading, Cain's body gradually shifted into a vertical position, remaining suspended above the altar. The position of his hands and arms remained in the death pose. The two Islamic Priests moved closer to Lucifer. There is one on each side, giving a balanced and symmetrical look. Each of them placed a hand on one side of the book that Lucifer was holding. As they did, Cain’s arms slowly stretched out as far as they could go. The Pope paused his reading, his eyes meeting Cain's still closed eyes. Like everyone else, he couldn't help but notice the noticeable transformation of Cain's body, now displaying a significant increase in muscle mass.

In a voice that resembled a dog growling in anger, Lucifer spoke.

“Cain, open your eyes!” he exclaimed, his voice brimming with enthusiasm. “The kingdom is yours to conquer!”

Both of Cain's eyes opened. As Kasdeja continued reading from the ancient book, the sound of Lucifer's commands echoed through the cathedral.

“Speak, my son, and live. The kingdom is yours!”

The moment Cain opened his mouth, it was almost as if his chest inflated with air, making it visually apparent.

“Father, I will surely speak as you have requested. During my speech, I will disclose the awe-inspiring wonders that exist in the vast expanse of the universe, as well as the profound unity that binds together every corner of our world.”

While Kasdeja continued to read, Cain remained suspended in the air. Following that, Cain proceeded to descend to the floor in a slow and deliberate manner, positioning himself directly in front of the altar. As his feet touched the floor, Kasdeja looked up at Lucifer.

“Close the book. It is incredible news to share that your son, who was once thought to be gone forever, has miraculously returned to us.”

With a swift motion, Lucifer closed the book and then carefully placed it on the altar. In a display of paternal affection, he directed his attention towards his son.

“I have chosen to pass on my power to my son, granting him all earthly authority and control. Take action and dedicate yourself to performing honorable deeds, all with the purpose of safeguarding humanity. Be responsible for them, providing them with support and eliminating any obstacles or enemies they may face. As the single and exclusive living god, you have accomplished the incredible feat of conquering both hell and death.”

Lucifer gracefully lowered himself onto one knee, gently grasping his son's right hand in his own, and pressed a tender kiss upon it.

“Father, please stand up. It is you who bestows upon me my powers. It is through your inspiration that I find the courage and determination to safeguard our world from its enemies.”

Turning his body, Cain directed himself towards the audience, ready to address them.

“It is time for me to assert my claim over what rightfully belongs to me. Our planet and all the living beings that inhabit it are under my control. Our commitment to shield them is such that we will confront anyone who dares to harm them in battle. In order to protect our world from destruction, I intend to begin by taking action to eliminate the alien invaders Enoch and Elijah sent with the intention of causing harm.”

As soon as Cain concluded, the audience erupted into enthusiastic cheers and applause. Not only Nancy, but Catherine and Brad as well, were clapping in the broadcast booth.

Once the celebration had died down, Cain gracefully made his way from the altar and proceeded to walk through the aisle of the Church, warmly greeting and shaking hands with numerous individuals he encountered. As he made his way outside the Cathedral, he was met with a cacophony of shouts from the throngs of people gathered in the square.

“Hail to Cain, who conquered death. Long live Cain. Our misery can only be brought to an end by Cain, who has the power to kill the Witnesses. Kill them Cain. Kill them.”

Loud and clear, the crowds voiced their new demand repeatedly through their chants.

Cain lifted his two arms as he shouted out.

“I can confirm that I am indeed alive and well. I have defeated death. I am the divine being that you worship and look up to as your god. It is my firm resolve to eliminate the Witnesses and ensure they no longer pose a threat. I want to assure you that this is a promise I am making.”

### Chapter 103

##### PM David Ben Bernstein’s Office

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Fear in Israel

D

avid with his advisors sat in awe, watching THE Network coverage of the apparent resurrection of Cain. The celebration in New Babylon was unprecedented, with Cain alive when he exited the Chapel. David turned toward Yona.

“Ah’ Satan or Lucifer the Morningstar; just passed his power to Cain. He even admitted he is ‘ah Satan,’ as he claimed, he is god of the earth. The Devil stated we were not telling the truth, indicating we created a fiction in our writings of The Old Testament, which describes the deceiving serpent he truly is. His claims are not true. What of this resurrection, Elijah?”

“David, Cain will soon break your peace. Cain will soon stop the sacrifices in ‘The Temple’. The cross at The Golden Gate will soon be removed by Cain, and the eagle of Rome will be placed above the gates once again. Many of you will be killed by Cain. He will desecrate 'The Temple' and sit upon the throne. Their ascent to power is imminent. The Roman Empire and the wicked new Roman Church have now emerged from the ashes to make war against all those who believe in the one God and Jesus. Woe unto the earth, the Lord God who lives, is angry with its inhabitants. He will soon release the 7 Bowls of Wrath upon the world.”

“Then what, Elijah?”

“Cain plans to surround Israel with the objective of annihilating you forever. Now he has every Jew here. He aims to achieve what others couldn't. Totally erase the descendants of Isaac. But the good news is Cain, and his armies will fail.”

David hung his head, feeling frustrated and desperate. From the time this started over three years ago, he grew exhausted. The alteration in the world since he took office as Prime Minister was astounding. Their allies are gone. The devil himself marked all Jews as the source of trouble within the world. At this moment, they must wait and see as in past struggles. Are they to be saved once again, by Adonai and now Jesus?

“Are you okay, David?” Yona asked.

David glanced upwards, knowing Yona could perceive the mist obscuring his gaze.

“I only hope and pray Yona, I am not the one who has led Israel to total destruction.”

“Ah’ Satan’s power today is short-lived. Read the New Testament. Cain, his father and their league of demons will be defeated.”

“I must go,” Elijah stated. “I have little time left.”

### Chapter 104

##### Interior Caves

##### Eden II

##### Passing the Torch

J

ohn sat across the table from Elijah and Enoch, then Reverend Marks, Mauvad, President Stevenson, Enil and Veronica joined them.

“You called the meeting Elijah. What is it about?”

“John, the time has come for you and Marks to take up the torch and continue the journey. The moment has arrived when we must request you and Reverend Marks to step forward and assume control during the entirety of the Tribulation. Enoch and I have decided to share some of our powers and knowledge with both of you, as we believe it will benefit you greatly.”

John fixed his gaze upon them, unable to look away.

“John, remember when I used to be Jack South,” Enoch asked, “do you recall?”

“I still have vivid memories of the very first day we crossed paths and it's something I will never forget. It's amazing to see the transformation you have undergone to become the person you are today. Since our initial interaction, you have undergone a notable evolution.”

“John, you're absolutely right. Allow me to explain it in this manner. For more than sixty years, I went by the name Jack South. Then, I experienced the mantle and spirit of Enoch enveloping me. The way things turned out was God's intention. I needed to comprehend individuals of this era, not those of times past. I was reborn and transformed into the person I am today when God declared it was time for me to become Enoch, my true self.”

With a rare display of emotion, Veronica nervously asked about end time issues.

“Enoch, what are you trying to say?

“John and Marks are venturing deep into the depths of Eden II. When they return, Marks and John will cease to be their identities. They are going to resemble Mark and John, who are characters in the New Testament. Yet, they will retain all of their existing knowledge. They both require full knowledge of God's plan. They, as Elijah and me, are going to witness the lies and deceit of the Antichrist, Cain. Rest assured, John is going to remain your husband and the father of your child. Reverend Marks is going to undergo the same experience.”

John was in a state of disbelief and rendered speechless. How can he understand the perspectives of John, the writer of five Biblical books, and Reverend Marks to comprehend the mindset of Mark, a disciple of Jesus?

Enoch and Elijah gestured for John and Marks to stand up.

“It's time, Reverend Marks and John.”

Upon leaving the room, Gabriel and Ariel emerged into view as they walked down the hallway. Enoch spoke to Gabriel.

“I was under the impression that you wouldn't return until the last battle.”

“We reached the conclusion to aid in John and Mark's transformation. We'll both go as soon as you finish the transition. We believed that by participating, it would make things easier for everyone.”

“As you wish, Gabriel.”

Enoch took the lead, guiding the group through the winding tunnels as they descended deeper into the unknown. This brought up a question in John's mind, leaving him pondering the answer.

“Is this the specific spot where you underwent your transition into Enoch?”

“Yes, John, it feels like my transformation happened just yesterday. I walked the same tunnels.”

Enoch stopped abruptly and directed his finger towards a deep crevice in the rock. They all squeezed through the narrow cut and entered a warmly lit room. Pillows were scattered across the floor, creating a comfortable atmosphere, while a crackling fire blazed in the center of the room. The smoke from the fire billowed upwards, escaping through a thin shaft at the cave's apex. They gathered around the fire, sitting on soft cushions arranged in a perfect circle. Once settled, Elijah assumed control and began giving orders.

“It is now your time, John and Marks, to assume your rightful place among us, just as fate had planned. Our purpose is to assist you in obtaining the mantle that rightfully belongs to you. I want your heads bowed; eyes closed. I am going to start speaking in a language you do not understand, leaving you puzzled by the foreign words. Before long, you'll comprehend the meaning behind what I am saying. Clear your mind of all thoughts as I speak, allowing yourself to be fully present in the moment. Seek guidance from the Holy Spirit to connect with your souls. As Gabriel and Ariel approach, you will feel their hands slowly making contact with your shoulders, grounding you in their presence. When you respond in the dialect I am using, feel the weight of your closed eyelids until I give you permission to open them. Take a deep breath and close your eyes, shutting out the world around you.”

Marks and John obediently followed every instruction given by Elijah. Gabriel and Ariel placed their hands upon their shoulders. John's heart skipped a beat as he could unmistakably feel Elijah's presence looming in front of him. The Prophet Elijah started speaking a language that was completely foreign to both of them.

“Kneel beside them, Enoch,” Elijah instructed, his voice firm and commanding.

As Enoch kneeled, he saw both John and Marks lost in their dreams, just as he had experienced over three years ago. Enoch's voice was barely a whisper as he spoke to them.

“John and Marks, open your hearts and allow the Holy Spirit to minister to your souls.”

As Elijah spoke, his voice resonated with the power and beauty of the ancient language of the angels. The moment John began responding in his trance, a rush of nostalgic visions overcame him, transporting him back in time. He entered into a different cave, the unmistakable musty scent overwhelmed him. In the dimly lit room, a crude desk held several flickering candles, casting dancing shadows on the walls. He saw a aged version of himself hunched over the desk, the sound of his furious scribbling filling the room. He strained his eyes, squinting to make out the words he was writing. However, despite his efforts, he was unable to get close enough to have a clear view. The elderly gentleman at the desk turned to him, his wrinkled face etched with curiosity, and in a foreign language, asked a question.

“What is it you wish to see?”

John understood the words the man said, as they resonated clearly in his mind. He instinctively answered his question without hesitation.

“I would like to see the writings on your desk. Would it be possible for me to see your written work?”

He smiled at John, his old eyes crinkling with warmth.

“You wrote this yourself. Are you unaware of the messages conveyed in your own words?”

As he took a step back, his eyes widened in surprise, his heart pounding in his chest. How could he have written the details of what lay on the desk? The old man in the cave extended his weathered hand towards him. He beckoned John to come closer, his voice laced with authority.

“Come and kneel before me,” he commanded.

John, shaking with fear, went to him and kneeled before him. The old man placed his two wrinkled hands on his head.

“From the depths of my soul, John, I gift you my dreams and visions.”

John couldn't shake the echo of his words, as they reverberated through his mind, erasing any trace of the cave or the mysterious speaker. In the field, John was surrounded by a soft, ethereal glow that seemed to radiate from everything. From the distance, a man appeared, his footsteps resolute as he steadily approached him. His warm, sun-kissed glow was accentuated by his light olive complexion and dark hair. With piercing eyes, he stood tall at a height of five feet, eleven inches. As he drew closer, John recognized him by the distinct scars on his hands. With a sudden gesture, he dropped to his knees, the impact sending a jolt through his body, and lowered his head humbly.

As he was kneeling, John turned his head slightly and caught a glimpse of his friend Marks out of the corner of his eye. In a similar way, he also adopted a prostrating position in front of Jesus. John's lips moved, but no sound escaped. His mouth opened, but silence filled the air as no noise came out from his throat. Jesus demonstrated His guidance by placing a comforting hand on their heads while speaking to them.

“John and Marks, look at Me.”

As Jesus continued talking, they raised their eyes toward him and listened intently to his words.

“These final days represent a significant moment for you to realize your destinies, as the era of human authority is on the verge of ending.”

John experienced a shuddering sensation throughout his body, accompanied by a burning feeling behind his eyes. The astonishing pace at which he witnessed images of people, papers, and books moving was mind-boggling, reaching speeds of thousands of miles per hour. It seemed to him that his mind was being imprinted with these thoughts, as if a large funnel was forcefully pushing them through a narrow opening. The incredible speed at which new ideas were flooding into John's brain left him feeling completely overwhelmed and unable to process them all. He felt like he was fast forwarding through scenes in a movie, the sensation was so strong. A strong sense of tingling spread across his skin, causing him to feel a heightened awareness. There were noticeable changes occurring in his physical form. It was at that moment that John suddenly heard the distinct voice of Elijah.

“Open your eyes,” Elijah said to John and Mark, urging them to wake up from the trance.

Marks, like John, opened their eyes and took in their surroundings. Knowing they were back from their journey, Elijah then posed a question. The same one he had asked Enoch over three years ago.

“Who do you consider yourself to be now?” Elijah inquired.

Responding fluently in the same language Elijah spoke, Mark and John confidently introduced themselves.

“I am John, the son of Zebedee and the brother of James,” he proudly declared.

“I am Mark, the Apostle from the city of Cyrene in Libya. I, as the author, wrote the Book of Mark, which is a part of the New Testament.”

As Elijah reached into his robe, he revealed a ram's horn, its curved shape fitting perfectly in his hand. As he poured the anointing oil upon their heads, a sense of sacredness filled the room, accompanied by a soft, murmured blessing.

“With favor and blessings from Jesus, you are empowered to go forth and spread the gospel, a mission that fills the air with hope and purpose.”

Arial then spoke to them.

“I ask that you stand. You are now our envoys to the earth. Go forth and let your good deeds shine as a beacon of hope.”

Gabriel stood before them, his voice resonating with authority.

“Arial and I must depart. It's time for John and Mark to take the stage. When we meet again, we will celebrate the return of Jesus as he restores the earth and lives with us eternally in harmony.”

Enoch, Mark, Elijah, as well as John bowed as Ariel and Gabriel left.

“Let's go,” Enoch said, his voice filled with excitement. “You have a long list of tasks ahead of you.”

### Chapter 105

##### Conference Room, Nebuchadnezzar Tower

##### New Babylon, Iraq

##### Execution Plans

C

ain addressed the General and the others present. His time had come, putting him in a good mood. “General Stoups today is November 23. It's time to eradicate any trace of the Witnesses from existence. Their time is running out, coming to a close. Mobilize a force of 100,000 soldiers and position them at the Israeli border. Have them take heavy armor and missiles with them. They will be staying there for a while.”

“Once our military is stationed on their border, make contact with Prime Minister David Bernstein. On November 30th, in front of the Golden Gate of their Temple, he will hand over the Witnesses Enoch and Elijah to us. Please inform him that I require safe passage for myself, my father, the two Islamic priests, Pope Peter, and Cardinal Richital. Inform their leaders that we plan to host a grand ceremony outside The Temple. Additionally, arrange for hotel rooms and accommodations for around 10,000 guests that can comfortably house them. They are to allow anyone into their country who wishes to attend the executions.”

“Consider it done, Lord Cain.”

“Additionally, we will arrange two guillotines on a stage in the street, positioned to face away from the Golden Gate. Seating will be erected across from this. Tell them it is important not to intervene with any of these requests. Let them know Enoch and Elijah will come willingly. Instruct the Israel leaders that once I eliminate them, it is imperative they refrain from touching the bodies. They are to rot lying in the street, so maggots and worms devour their lifeless corpses. Once the executions are done, we plan to leave a company of soldiers behind at that location. Any interference with them is strictly prohibited. Is the concept clear to you?”

“Yes, Lord Cain, I will do as you have requested.”

“Good. I anticipate a seamless experience without encountering any issues. Make sure the Prime Minister understands that I require their full cooperation. You are free to leave.”

After they left, Cain looked toward his father, Lucifer.

“The moment has come to unite the soldiers and create the formidable final army. Completing this task will take some time. Currently, I desire for Muslims to acquire guillotines and commence the execution of Christians and non-believers who reject my church's teachings. What remains of the U.S. will be our starting point.”

“I shall inform our leaders of your desires, son. This time, we will win, Cain.”

### Chapter 106

##### PM David Bernstein’s Office

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Soldiers And Demands

D

avid’s advisors, Yona, Meyer, and Jacob, were waiting on the arrival of Enoch and Elijah. In an ongoing conversation, David posed a question to Jacob regarding the soldiers who were being sent to Israel from the ten.

“How many 'Alliance of Ten' troops are at our border as we speak?”

“Somewhere around 100,000. They have heavy armor and a few hundred missiles, non-nuclear. They are not moving across the border, they are in place, camped about ten miles away.”

“Thank you, Jacob,” he said, his words laced with concern about the amount of firepower they had with them.

“Yona, does scripture tell us in the New Testament, Elijah and Enoch are to be killed?”

“Yes, David they do. However, in three and a ½ days, God intends to raise them up and they will ascend into Heaven.”

“After they are gone, what is the future for us?”

“Cain, the Antichrist, plans to make his entrance into 'The Temple' and take his seat on the throne, positioned in the sacred inner sanctum known as the 'Holy of Holies'. Cain is set to declare himself as the supreme deity, ruling over every corner of the world. At the same time, a magnificent altar is going to be painstakingly assembled on the Gentile Courtyard of 'The Temple'. Similar to Elijah's act, the False Prophet is going to bring fire from the Heavens and use it to ignite the sacrifice.”

“What else can we expect to take place after this?”

“As it was during the time of Christ, they will continue to occupy Israel until the very end. Their chilling intention in the last days is to exterminate the entire Jewish population from the planet.”

The office door swung open, and Elijah and Enoch entered with purpose, their presence commanding attention.

“Yona,” Elijah said, “you are correct. Their army may be formidable, but on that day, Jesus and his Angels will lay waste to every last one of them. Conclusion of the narrative, conclusion of Satan, and the Antichrist.”

Enoch, and Elijah confidently settled into their chairs at the conference table. David cleared his throat before addressing them, his words filled with conviction.

“Elijah, I have an urgent message from the powerful Alliance of Ten. They have set a date for your surrender on November 30th and the location is in front of the Golden Gate of 'The Temple'. The intention of these individuals is to harm and potentially end the lives of both you and Enoch.”

With a smile that conveyed understanding, Enoch directed his gaze towards David.

“David, we already know. We request Meyer and Yona as our escorts when we are taken to meet our executioners. Offer no resistance. Let them broadcast the event worldwide. Sharing their deed openly would be beneficial for them and us. It is highly recommended to comply with all of their demands without hesitation. This day signifies the conclusion of our mission.”

“Elijah, your death would mean the loss of your protection, which is something we deeply value.”

“David, rest assured that there is no reason to fear what is about to happen. The events that are destined to unfold must inevitably take place. Eventually, Israel will establish a peaceful reign over the entire world, with Jesus as its King, where there will be no more death, pain, or hunger.”

“As you please, Elijah, we will accommodate your request. How shall we prepare for this?”

“Enoch and I have made plans to be at 'The Temple' that morning. We are prepared to go. We will follow your escorts to where Cain and his demons are waiting outside the gates. Once you have departed from the scene, we will willingly allow ourselves to be bound by them. There is nothing else to add to the discussion. That's the extent of it. Surrendering to them, David, is our duty.”

As Enoch and Elijah stood side by side, Elijah confirmed the execution date once again.

“Save the date - we have a meeting planned for November 30th, which is only a week away.”

Enoch and Elijah departed silently. David sat motionless, fixated on the door.

### Chapter 107

##### Somewhere in the Mountains of Israel

##### Understanding Death

E

noch asked, “You like the wilderness don’t you, Elijah?”

“Yes, I do Enoch. Here you can see the majesty of God’s universe in all its glory. At night, gaze upwards, observe the stars, constellations, planets. The cities hide the Heavens from view. Here, you can find peace with God, whom I know is waiting for us.”

“Are we leaving the transports?”

“Yes, John and Mark can use them. It is necessary for them to have them in order to fulfill their destinies. They will save many and provide guidance to others through Eden II with their broadcasts. We have opened their minds. This way, they possess the capacity to advise born again Christians how to continue resisting Cain.”

Enoch stared at the fire. Elijah truly favored wilderness over cities. He understood why he felt at peace during these times. As Enoch gazed at the leaping flames, he thought of his Jack South family, for the first time since transitioning to Enoch. They were safe. Enoch was certain he'd reunite with them post-war. Not much longer. Enoch looked up at Elijah.

“Are you afraid of the inevitable end?”

“Enoch, we have discussed this before. However, I have been alive for nearly 3,000 years. Your existence, spans over 5,000 years. None have lived as long without death. I think our mortal lives have been lengthy enough.”

“We have fulfilled our destinies?”

“Yes, we have indeed. As I look at the magnificent Temple in Jerusalem, a deep sense of fulfillment fills my heart, confirming that I have completed the sacred mission entrusted to me. During this 'Time of Sorrows', I consider saving sinners as the more significant of my two accomplishments. Speaking on behalf of Adonai, it has been an incredible privilege to guide both humanity and sinners towards the redeeming love of Jesus. Enoch, death holds no terror for us. Death, like birth, is an inherent and inevitable part of the natural cycle. The physical form that God bestowed upon Adam and Eve was a vessel for their soul and spirit, nothing more. God breathed His spirit of life into us, filling our lungs with a divine energy. Our body, a mere vessel, served as a temporary abode for us to fulfill our purpose on earth - to live for the glory of God. When life on earth reaches its end, we surrender this fleeting vessel back to the earth's embrace. We eagerly anticipate the arrival of the next masterpiece, its magnificence promising everlasting fulfillment.”

“What cruel fate awaits us before our impending death?”

“Many false charges will be read against us, accusing us of committing heinous acts against humanity. In a cruel parallel to Jesus' suffering, Cains Prophets will mock and embarrass us, subjecting us to relentless ridicule and scorn. The Qur'an explicitly mentions the act of beheading and cutting off fingers. Then they will leave our lifeless bodies to decay under the scorching sun.”

Elijah leaned forward, his eyes locked on the flickering flames, as a silence settled over him. After a prolonged stillness, he finally broke it by remarking to Enoch.

“In the same way as Christ, we will remain completely silent without uttering a single sound. When we are asked questions, our responses will embody the same wisdom and grace that Jesus displayed. Our response to be given is, ‘if you say so’. In our dying moments, we proclaim our surrender, whispering, Jesus, I entrust my spirit to you.”

“You are looking forward to this!”

“I am Enoch, and so should you. We are counting down the days until we are reunited with God, just a few more to go. I eagerly await death, yearning to join the righteous saints in the blissful realm of Heaven. When Cain, his father, and all those demons are banished, we will be present to see it happen.”

With a smile on his face, Enoch looked forward to the day when he would triumphantly bind the demons with chains after his death and resurrection. He felt an overwhelming desire to do this.

As they watched the fire, the crackling sound and the warmth it emitted created a soothing atmosphere, allowing them to drift into their own thoughts.

### Chapter 108

##### Outside The Temples Golden Gate

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Bind Them

F

rom the top steps leading to the Golden Gate, Yona and David saw the scaffolding being assembled for the executions.

“Yona, what on earth are they building?” David asked as he watched the workers.

“A viewing area. They are putting up a grandstand for Enoch and Elijah’s execution. Cain, with the Fallen 200, will be there, as THE Network broadcasts the event worldwide.”

“This is unbelievable.”

“Their planned ceremony will be even more astonishing. Reminiscent of the Roman Empire. They have brought in 300 horses with gilded chariots. They requested equestrian space. We set them up in an area by Lions Gate Street. They brought in temporary buildings to use as stables. They have over 20 chariots.”

Yona pointed to a platform with electronics being installed.

“Over there, the area is being set up for THE Network’s live broadcast. What’s even more concerning David, I understand attendees are coming, dressed as they did during the time of Nero. They are turning this into a mini–Circus Maximus for the execution.”

“Yona, why am I here today?”

“You are to escort both Enoch and Elijah to them, from the Golden Gate.”

“You’re kidding.”

“No, I am not. The men there want to discuss the transfer with you.”

Yona pointed to the two men by the gate, their stern expressions hinting at a sense of authority. David and Yona watched as the men approached them, their footsteps echoing on the pavement. Once they arrived in front of them, the man cleared his throat and began to speak.

“Excuse me, are you the renowned Prime Minister David Bernstein?”

“Yes, I am,” he said confidently.

“Thank you for coming. We asked you here today to inform you that it is your responsibility to guide Enoch and Elijah through the majestic Golden Gate. Afterward, you will guide them towards the grand podium that is currently being constructed on the street.”

The agent of Cain directed their gaze towards a large stage like structure, which was unfinished.

“You will hand over Enoch and Elijah to Alliance Police, who will take custody of them. They instructed me to inform you of your invitation to the execution. This invitation is open to everyone who desires to attend without any restrictions. We will make comfortable arrangements for you and your guests, ensuring everyone feels at home.”

“No thank you, we will see it on television.”

“Your loss David. Don't forget, you have to accompany them down here by 11:15 a.m. on November 30th.”

“I acknowledge and understand the request that you have made. Israel is committed to fulfilling your wishes and will comply accordingly.”

“I have one more item to discuss with you. The criminals must be securely bound. You can expect to receive the bindings from us.”

David pondered the request and concluded, 'he won't comply'.

“Whomever you work with, tell them the Israeli government makes it clear that Enoch and Elijah will not be bound. They will walk as I, down to the podium. Once you have them in your custody, feel free to bind them as you wish. Inform your handlers that Israel vehemently rejects their request.”

Not waiting for a response, David turned and spoke to Yona.

“Let us leave this filth,” as they walked briskly away. He was becoming angry.

### Chapter 109

##### November 29th

##### Eden II

##### Saying Goodbye

N

early everyone at Eden II congregated in the great room. For the final occasion, they had been eagerly anticipating the arrival of Enoch. Veronica inquired with John about whether Elijah would be attending.

“No, just Enoch. We understand Elijah is at ‘The Temple’ and will stay there until they hand him over.”

John glanced down at his wristwatch to check the time. Enoch's arrival was long overdue. There were numerous people at The Great Room that it was standing room only. Many were those present Enoch rescued during his time. A Levite approached John.

“We have plenty of wine to celebrate with today. We broke open another cask last night.”

“Thank you,” John said with a smile.

In his thoughts, John imagined this moment as if it were the last supper, with the room filled with a sense of finality. It could not be. The sun was high in the sky, signaling midday. Enoch emphasized the need to get back to 'The Temple' before darkness descended. There would be no final feast, no clinking of silverware or laughter filling the room.

A sudden, unexpected noise caught John's attention. A young child burst through the door, her voice filled with excitement as she shouted to anyone who would listen.

“Enoch is here. He is here!”

Enoch confidently strode through the door, the sound of his sandals echoing through the room. The room filled with well wishers burst into life with the sound of clapping, a symphony of applause that echoed off the walls. He stood there, a wide grin spreading across his face. As John looked at the faces of President Stevenson and Cardinal Mahoney, he could see the struggle to hold back tears. He felt the same emotion welling up inside him, as tears streamed down his face, but he smiled bravely as Enoch addressed the crowd.

“Wine for everyone. I have something to say.”

The stewards started pouring the wine. Enoch stood in the middle of the room.

“The journey we have walked together to the halfway point of God's plan has been long and filled with challenges. However, for each of you, the end of Tribulation will bring a prolonged anticipation for the fulfillment of God's divine purpose. I have faith that you shall persist in carrying out our noble endeavors. I want to express my deep love and gratitude to each and every one of you who supported me through my ministry.”

“I can still vividly remember the day when John graciously offered me a platform to tell my wild story on Bear News. I could see him and his crew in the crowd, their presence giving me a sense of support during my first sermon. In your selfless devotion, you forsook everything to proclaim the gospel of Jesus. It's impossible for me to erase from my memory the encounter with Reverend Marks, currently Mark, who took on the role of the devil's advocate. Surprisingly, he approached me afterwards and confessed, 'I currently believe that you are indeed who you claim to be.”

Enoch pointed to the Cardinal.

“Cardinal Mahoney, who made the decision to leave the Vatican, joined us in our mission to persuade Catholics all around the world that their church had been infiltrated by Satan. Our heartfelt thanks are extended to you, and we have faith that God will bestow upon you, his rewards.”

He looked out on the crowd as he singled out others.

“Presidents Stevenson and Mauvad, both of whom made the courageous decision to leave their respective countries, embarked on a mission to spread the gospel. The group of congresspersons, and members of Parliament, made the decision to leave everything behind to spread the good news. Let us not overlook Matthews, who displayed immense courage by putting his life on the line to be present here. Each one of you played a crucial role in bringing God's prophecy to fruition.”

“At this time, I lift my glass to each of you. Our separation is brief. Remember, in 3 ½ years, we will reunite. This time, at a banquet held by Jesus Christ Himself. I will, in front of Jesus, toast to you once more.”

With everyone gathering around him to give hugs and say their goodbyes, Enoch drained his glass, cherishing their final moments together. Mark and John patiently stood in the background, waiting for everyone to seize their opportunity to say goodbye.

As the crowd dissipated, Enoch approached John and Mark, his footsteps echoing in the now muted surroundings. He delivered one final directive to them.

“From tomorrow on, you two will speak for me in the wilderness. And continue to spread the gospel and fight against the antichrist.”

John with Mark hugged Enoch together. John was still fighting back tears as he backed away and told Enoch what was bothering him.

“It has finally dawned on me the overwhelming emotions that the 11 disciples must have experienced on that fateful day, just before the crucifixion.”

Enoch, smiling, surprised John with his next comment.

“You were their John, and so were you, my doubting Thomas.” Enoch smiled at the two men.

At that very moment, the memory of that specific day, which occurred more than 2,000 years ago, suddenly flooded back into Johns mind.

After a momentary pause, Enoch pivoted on his heel and exited the premises through the door. Without turning his head, he continued on his way without looking back. He had left to confront his fate and was no longer present with them.

Once again, John experienced a deep sense of absence that was reminiscent of the feeling he had when Christ went away from them. How does he feel and know all this?

### Chapter 110

##### November 29th, Late Evening Prayers

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Holy of Holies

E

noch walked through the gate, as it was being closed by the Levites. He walked through the Women’s Court, then the Court of the Priests. No one was there. Enoch removed his sandals and walked toward the Holy Place. The entrance was partially open. He walked in, then shut the doorway. The menorah was lit, allowing him to see where he stood. He heard Elijah’s voice.

“Come here Enoch. Join me in the sacred space, kneel by the Ark.

Enoch kneeled; eyes closed. In the quietness, the sounds of a thousand voices filled his ears, harmonizing in a melodic chorus.

“Holy is the Lord God Almighty, who was, is, and will be.”

Enoch glanced in the direction of Elijah, his eyes meeting his. Once again, he closed his eyes, and it was at this moment that the Holy Spirit graciously revealed to him yet another captivating vision. The throne of God, where the heavenly choir gathers to sing his praises, is a scene of awe-inspiring beauty. He gazed towards the roof and uttered the words, ‘May Your will be done.’

With determination, he stood up and proceeded to walk from the Holy Place, making his way into the courtyard. In the center, he sat silently, gazing up at the twinkling stars above. After a span of four days, he intends to make his way back to these stars once more. Only a handful of days from now.

Elijah found Enoch near dawn, where he had been sitting all night.

“Let’s eat breakfast. The Levites have prepared a table for us.”

Enoch and Elijah made their way towards the Gentiles' Courtyard, where they discovered a magnificently decorated banquet table awaiting their arrival. Yona and David were among the attendees at the event, along with several heads of the Israeli government. As soon as they caught sight of them, they paused their conversations and stood up as a sign of respect. Once the Prophets had taken their seats at the table, Yona proceeded to say the blessing.

“We acknowledge and praise you, Lord our God, who reigns as the King of the entire universe. We express our gratitude for sending Enoch and Elijah, Your appointed Witnesses, who have been sharing the truth of Jesus the Messiah to Your chosen people, the nation of Israel. We are grateful for the protection you have provided us with. May You bless this food and sanctify it in Your Name.”

Throughout the entire meal, there was not a single person who uttered a word. After the meal, Elijah joined the Levites to discuss 'The Temple' maintenance. Elijah found immense joy in 'The Temple'. Yona approached and took a seat right next to Enoch.

“Enoch, are you prepared for what's about to happen?”

“Yes, I am Yona. I know soon after my death, I will return to my place in Heaven. I am prepared to go back home.”

“You did an excellent job. Your execution of God's purposes in these final days has been truly remarkable.”

As they sat together, taking in the beauty of the early sunrise, Enoch took a moment to thank him for his support and faith.

David arrived at his location promptly at 11:00 a.m. to gather him.

“Enoch, it is time.”

With determined steps, he trailed behind David all the way to the gate. Elijah was already standing there. As they stood there, their eyes fixed on the platform that held not one, but two guillotines. For some inexplicable reason, it appeared utterly absurd. Enoch turned his gaze towards Elijah and found himself on the verge of laughter.

“Cain really went above and beyond with the planning of this event. In what feels like a mere day, it appears as though ancient Rome has been completely reconstructed.”

“Enoch, you never fail to deliver a clever pun. Please hand your staff to Yona. He is going to ensure that it is placed in the appropriate location. For now, the staff has served its purpose, but will be required again later. Soon, another shall use its powers.”

### **Chapter 111**

##### Brad Williams Reporting

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Cain’s Temporary Revenge

T

he announcer began, “Nations of the world, welcome to THE Network News. Live from Jerusalem, at the Golden Gate in Israel, with your host, Brad Williams.

“I would like to extend a warm and cheerful good morning to all the wonderful people in the world. Today, our team, consisting of Nancy Arms and Catherine Kwan, will be providing coverage for the executions of the alien terrorists. Over the past 3 1/2 years, they have been responsible for the deaths of over a billion individuals, and the toll on humanity is devastating. In just a short while, Enoch and Elijah are set to be handed over by the Israeli government to the ‘Alliance of Ten'.

“In cities and small towns all around the world, people are filled with joy and excitement as they cheer and celebrate the long-awaited defeat of these extraterrestrial beings. Following the executions, we will be providing coverage of parties and celebrations happening globally.”

“If you take a look at our split screen, you will notice that on the platform, there are two guillotines that have been set up specifically for Enoch and Elijah. In the backdrop, you can admire the stunning Third Temple' and the Golden Gate. The stands are honored by the appearance of dignitaries hailing from almost every nation. The reason for their attendance is to witness the executions taking place. The total number of people present at this location, whether they are in the seating area or lining the parade route, is estimated to be around 30,000. In order to facilitate unrestricted travel to Israel, the Israeli governments state department relaxed their border laws for the event. All the hotels in the city of Jerusalem are currently fully booked.”

“Cain, who is not only our Leader but also revered as the god of the earth, will grace us with his presence at the event, alongside his esteemed father and various other dignitaries. Expect their arrival in a few moments, as they are about to make a dramatic entrance on chariots. It has come to our understanding that Cain, along with his father, Pope Peter the 2nd, Cardinal Ritchital, the Ayatollah Shahin, and the Cleric Abbas, will be arriving using chariots.”

“I see the Pope in his chariot Brad,” Nancy said, “coming down the street.”

In a mesmerizing moment, the cameras captured the Pope in the spotlight, his hands firmly gripping the reins of a resplendent golden chariot that was being drawn by two magnificent golden horses. Catherine provided a detailed description of the spectacle.

“The wheels of the chariot have been adorned with a layer of gold, giving them a luxurious and opulent appearance. The body of the chariot is embellished with gold-plated markings and symbols. Today, you will notice that the Holy Father has added a new garment to his usual attire. A vibrant, scarlet cloak drapes over his shoulders, making him impossible to miss.”

“The Pope will read the charges and death sentence to both Elijah and Enoch,” Brad added. “He will stand next to the guillotines.”

“Cardinal Richital is driving a similar chariot, being led by two white horses,” Nancy said in an excited voice.

They watched until his chariot passed the review booth. Then Brad turned back toward Nancy.

“Nancy let's exchange snippets of the vibrant celebrations happening around the world. Our extensive network of cameras and reporters spans across global cities like London, Madrid, Paris, Dallas, New Babylon, Tehran, and others in Brazil, Egypt, Jordan, and China. Everywhere you look, people are celebrating and dancing, as if the entire world is caught up in a never-ending party. Amidst great fanfare, Cain and the 'Alliance of Ten' declared today a national holiday, igniting a sense of joy and unity among the people. Block parties, a beloved tradition in neighborhoods across the globe, bring people together in celebration. In the capitals of many countries, governments are hosting extravagant celebrations. The streets are filled with rejoicing people, joyously commemorating the imminent defeat of the two alien destroyers of nations. It's unlike anything we've ever seen before! “he exclaimed, his eyes fixated on the monitor that displayed festive gatherings in progress.

“We understand, Brad, celebrations marking the end of Enoch and Elijah are going to last all-night long,” Catherine added.

“They are happy Catherine. This day has finally come.”

“The Pope’s chariot has pulled up to the gallows,” Nancy said. “He is exiting his chariot and will take his seat in the golden center chair. Abbas and Shahin are going to occupy the other two chairs.”

“Cardinal Richital has arrived at the seating area,” Catherine added, her voice filled with excitement. “In the enclosed zone, partially veiled by vibrant purple and red drapes, he will sit alongside Cain and his father. From our split screen, you can catch a glimpse of their Royal Box, perched at the pinnacle of the stands. Two grand chairs, adorned with gold, are side by side, resembling thrones. Cain and Lucifer will be seated there. The other seats in the enclosure exude an air of prestige, reserved exclusively for dignitaries.”

A blast of trumpets sounded, announcing Lucifer the Morning Star's arrival, as Catherine commented.

“At the moment,” Nancy stated, “you can witness the spectacle of Lucifer's chariot being propelled by a quartet of stunning white Arabian horses. Take note of his appearance, as he is wearing the uniform of an ancient Roman military officer. According to the information provided, his attire for today consists of a red tunic. Adding to the description, his upper body is concealed by a Roman Lorica Segmentata armor with officer brass trimmings. The cloak he has on is quite unique, as it is two-colored, with a vibrant red on the inside and a contrasting blue on the outside. The helmet that he is currently wearing is a Roman officer's helmet which is beautifully adorned with gold decorations and features a striking red horsehair plume. The design of his sandals was inspired by the footwear worn by Roman warriors during the summer. The sandals have leather thongs that lace up midway of his calf, providing a stylish and unique look.”

“Abbas and Shahin have just made their grand entrance,” Catherine said. “arriving together in a magnificent blue chariot, elegantly pulled by six stunning black Arabian horses. The attire they wear consists of robes that are reminiscent of the clothing worn during the time of Mohammed. The color of their robes is a beautiful shade of blue, gracefully adorned with delicate gold trimmings. Similar to the style of Boudin clothing, their eyes are the only feature that can be seen. They will sit with the Pope by the gallows. Next, we have the military presence coming. The heads of the four branches of our armed forces are dressed in the same uniforms that we witnessed during the Coronation of Cain.”

“Prior to Cain's arrival,” Nancy added, “a procession of 200 young women will precede him, gracefully scattering rose petals along the pathway. Their attire consists of white linen garments that are sheer in nature. The entire ensemble has a translucent quality to it, giving them the appearance of short skirts from the eighties.”

“The information given to us,” Catherine added, “was that these virgins are laying over 500 pounds of rose petals upon the street. Brad, you won't want to miss the sight of their entrance on the parade route.”

“Catherine, I must admit that you are absolutely correct. Like you, I am also eager to see their outfits. The esteemed leaders of The Ten are arriving. This group of individuals currently occupies a float that symbolizes the entire globe. The float is being pulled by a team consisting of 16 white horses. In a similar fashion to the Rose Parade in Pasadena, California, the organizers of this event chose to embellish the floats with an array of vibrant flowers. The parade vehicle is designed to represent the world, as evident from the presence of a large rotating globe adorned with distinct types and hues of flowers. A marching military band follows the float, adding a lively and patriotic atmosphere to the event. As they make their way past the seating areas, they are taking turns playing the Anthems of the Ten countries.”

“The upcoming group consists of friends who have a strong affiliation with the government. Amongst their ranks are the CEOs of the largest companies in the world, along with influential political leaders. Their arrival is announced by the sight of a grand float, meticulously crafted to resemble the city of New Babylon. There are an estimated 190 of them on the float, making it quite a remarkable sight.”

“Next, we have the honor guard, consisting of a representative from each country of The Ten, proudly standing in their respective military uniforms. The sight of them proudly carrying the flags of their countries fills the air with a sense of national pride. Master Sergeant Richard Giles from South Bend, Indiana, is holding high the flag that represents the 'Alliance of Ten'.”

“The women with roses are arriving,” Nancy stated. “Cain should make his appearance soon.”

As the women passed in their sheer dress, the thunderous sound of hooves echoed in the air behind them. Racing down the parade route at full speed, a chariot with eight black horses produced a deafening noise. Cain's cloak trailed behind him, fluttering like a dark flag in the breeze. As he drove the chariot, his hands gripped the reins tightly, guiding the horses with the skill and precision of a charioteer at the Circus Maximus.

“You notice Nancy,” Brad commented, “Cain's attire comprises a sleek, pure black Roman Officer's tunic, accompanied by a gleaming, golden Roman Lorica Segmentata armor that adorns his upper body. In the center of the armor, there is a magnificent Roman Eagle, formed in solid gold. He is draped in a two-colored cloak, with a vibrant red lining on the inside and a sleek black exterior. On his head, he proudly wears a helmet belonging to a Roman soldier, an heirloom passed down from his father. Cain's helmet is skillfully made, formed from pure gold, and adorned with a black horsehair plume.”

Once more, the trumpets resounded through the air, their echoes reaching every corner, announcing the grand arrival of Cain's chariot. The street was filled with the thunderous sound of thirty-two horses' hooves pounding against the pavement. With a sharp turn, Cain maneuvered his chariot at the end of the street, accompanied by the resounding roar of approval from the crowd lining the stands and parade route. He then returned to the viewing stand, the bustling crowd around him creating a vibrant atmosphere. Cain held the reins tightly as the black stallions launched into the sky, their powerful hooves pounding against the air. The people were captivated by it, unable to tear their eyes away. As Cain continued his maneuvers with the chariot, he could hear the crowds cheering him on and feel the excitement in the air.

Once Cain's chariot came to a stop, the sound of wheels on the pavement ceased, and the attendants swiftly rolled out a luxurious red carpet towards the stands. Stepping out of the chariot, Cain was greeted by the booming voice of the crier announcing his arrival.

“All bow,” the herald proclaimed, his powerful voice booming, “for Lord Robert Cain, the almighty king and earth's divine protector.”

Seven resounding trumpet blasts filled the air, their echoes reverberating through the stands as the crowd bowed in reverence. As he ascended toward his throne, the roar of exuberant cheers echoed through the crowd, resonating along the bustling street. Once the applause died down, Cain, standing tall by his regal golden chair, requested a microphone to be passed to him. He confidently announced to the excited crowds, his voice booming through the PA system.

“Bring the prisoners.”

Suddenly, the air was filled with the haunting sound of the drum corps playing a deathly cadence. For thousands of years, they had relied on this eerie noise, a solemn reminder of a prisoner's final breaths. As they stood on the steps of the Golden Gate, the sight of Elijah and Enoch flanking the Prime Minister of Israel, David Ben Bernstein, was a surreal experience. With each step they took down the stone steps, the atmosphere grew heavier as they neared the foreboding gallows. No bindings held them in place. Upon reaching the top of the platform, a man dressed as a Centurion of ancient Rome greeted them, complete with gleaming armor and a commanding presence. David relinquished custody of the prisoners to him. David turned to Elijah and whispered to him.

“May God’s blessings follow you,” as he kissed him on the cheek.

David, facing Enoch, uttered the phrase once more and proceeded to plant a gentle kiss on his cheek. Subsequently, he redirected his attention to face the Centurion.

“With great reluctance, I am surrendering these men on behalf of the entire government of Israel. The fact that you take pleasure in killing these men is extremely disturbing, and I find it morally wrong.”

After turning around, the Prime Minister proceeded to walk back in the direction of the Golden Gate. As soon as he stepped foot inside 'The Temple', a group of 20 Levites promptly closed the gate behind him. The loud sound of closing and latching reverberated throughout the entire street, creating an echoing effect that could be heard from a distance.

Positioned near the seats reserved for the Pope and two prominent Islamic leaders, Elijah and Enoch stood with grace and poise. In front of the audience, the pontiff stood and addressed them directly.

“Elijah and Enoch, we hereby accuse you of committing grave offenses against the entirety of humanity.”

With great poise, he gracefully unveiled a hidden scroll, skillfully extracting it from within his robes. After stepping forward, a scribe approached Peter the 2nd and took the scroll from him, proceeding to unroll it. The scribe, filled with immense humility, humbly knelt down before the Pope, carefully presenting the scroll to him, and ensuring that it was positioned in his direction. Peter, with his eyes fixed on the opened scroll tightly clutched by the scribe, commenced reading the intriguing contents written on it.

“Are either of you denying your participation in these illegal activities, or are you admitting to the offenses they are accusing you of?”

“If you say so,” they both replied in unison.

“Enoch, they are accusing you of causing earthquakes. Did you actually commit these crimes?”

“If you say so.”

“Enoch, I must ask you directly, have you committed the crime of deliberately creating hurricanes, resulting in the loss of numerous lives?”

“If you say so.”

“Elijah, can you confirm whether you assisted in the perpetration of these crimes?”

“If you say so.”

“It's clear that Peter's patience is wearing thin with the answer they persist in giving,” Catherine noted. “Enoch and Elijah are echoing the very same answers that Jesus once provided to Pilate.”

“I agree,” Nancy said. “Peter is becoming infuriated. You are right, Catherine. I found the answers from Jesus in the gospels. They are both stating the same responses.”

Once more, the Pope positioned himself in front of the captives and began reciting words from the scroll.

“Was it the two of you who were responsible for the creation of the volcanoes, asteroid collision, formation of the cloud, comet strike, and the infestations?”

“If you say so,” they both replied,

“Elijah and Enoch, I would like to give you both an opportunity to speak in your defense. Is there anything you wish to say?”

Both of them remained silent and refrained from uttering a single word. With an intense and disapproving glare, the Pope fixed his eyes on them.

“In front of the entire global audience, at this precise moment, we extend an invitation for you to kneel down and worship Cain and his father, whether it is you, Enoch, or Elijah. Rest assured, if you choose to do so, we will ensure your freedom.”

Both of them remained motionless, with no expression on their faces and not uttering a single word.

Looking toward the stands, the Pope noticed Cain and his father's, were standing side by side. Their eyes locked on Elijah and Enoch. It was eerily quiet in the seating area, the stage, and the streets.

“Brad, it seems that Cain and Lucifer are exchanging intense glances with Enoch and Elijah,” Nancy whispered. “Their eyes are locked in a tense stare, neither willing to break the silence.”

“There is a lot of hatred between the four of them. I think Cain, as his father, wants both prisoners to know they are now in charge.”

Cain turned away from Enoch's intense gaze and shifted his attention to his father. Cain extended his hand towards Lucifer, flashing a thumbs down sign. With a smile, Lucifer repeated the gesture, his eyes gleaming mischievously. In unison, they extend their arms showing their hands, displaying their thumbs downward for everyone to observe. A wave of roaring applause and shouts swept through the stands, with people signaling their opinions through thumbs down gestures.

“Kill them, kill them,” the crowd said as the chant continued.

As the onlookers kept chanting, their hands mimicked the thumbs down sign of death, intensifying the atmosphere. The noise of the crowds gradually faded away as Cain and Lucifer settled in to watch, side by side.

As Pope Peter the 2nd read out the verdict to them, his words carried a weight of authority and finality.

“Enoch and Elijah, we pronounce your sentence–death by the swift blade of the guillotine. Do you have any words or explanations to offer regarding your actions?”

They stood in silence, their eyes locked in an unspoken conversation. The pontiff continued glaring at them, his disapproving gaze intensified by their nonchalant attitudes.

“It is through your deeds that your life will come to an end.”

As he sat in his chair, the Pope shrugged his shoulders with a hint of indifference. The Ayatollah then rose, his presence commanding the attention of the Witnesses.

“Are you from Al-Shaitan?”

“If you say so,” they both answered.

With a swift motion of his right hand, the Ayatollah delivered a resounding slap to both Enoch and Elijah's faces. He turned to the soldiers, his voice commanding and confident as he gave them instructions.

“Bind the prisoners tightly, leaving no room for movement or escape.”

As the two soldiers approached, Elijah and Enoch preemptively positioned their hands behind their backs, bracing themselves for the restraints. With precision, the soldiers bound each of them, their leather thongs digging into their wrists.

“Brad, I am surprised they used straps to bind them,” Catherine commented. “I would have thought, handcuffs or chains.”

“It serves as a cautionary tale for those who come after. 'The Alliance of Ten' is now governed with the same authority and structure as ancient Rome. The thongs and costumes serve as a vivid warning to everyone.”

Enoch and Elijah were marched by the soldiers towards the two-standing guillotines, their heavy footsteps echoing in the tense silence.

The Pope stood from his golden chair, his voice resonating through the air as he instructed the soldiers.

“Prepare them.”

“On your knees,” the soldiers commanded, guiding them to slide onto the board and position their necks on the rest. Both of them nodded in agreement, showing their compliance.

Each soldier used leather belts to strap them securely down onto the board. The centurion, aware that they were both in a secure position, proceeded to forcefully push down the wooden beams. The beam had a slot that enabled the blade to pass through, ultimately reaching the back of their necks. With fear in their eyes, the soldiers cautiously retreated a few steps from the menacing guillotines. There was total silence in the entire area. Not a single word could be heard. The wind came to a complete halt, not even a murmur could be detected.

With great enthusiasm, the Pope shouted to the crowd of spectators who were eagerly watching.

“The long and arduous trials that we have faced are finally behind us. Within a matter of moments, the alien terrorists will meet their ultimate demise and breathe their final breath. Everyone rejoice everywhere. It won't be long before these aliens cease to exist.”

The air was filled with the sounds of shouting emanating from the stands as enthusiastic spectators cheered on.

“Kill them, kill them, kill the Witnesses!” The chant continued for nearly five minutes.

With a calm demeanor, the Pope gracefully approached the front of the guillotines, positioning himself between the two machines while facing away from the eager crowd. In his final address, he directed his words towards both Enoch and Elijah.

“One last chance. Will you bow down to Cain and his father?”

Elijah and Enoch, with raised voices, simultaneously shouted at the Pope, before shifting their gaze upwards towards the vast expanse of the Heavens.

“I commit my spirit to you, Lord Jesus.”

Kasdeja crouched down in a squatting position, ensuring that only Elijah and Enoch were within earshot.

“This is for Cain.”

Stepping backwards, he revealed a red scarf that he had been concealing. He raised it up, ensuring that it was visible to all who were present. With a simple wave of his hand, he let go of the scarf and set it free. With a graceful flutter, the scarf gently descended to the stage floor, just as the guillotine blades began their swift descent towards the two Witnesses. The heads of both individuals fell into the baskets at the exact same moment. The blood soaked the Pope's garments in a gruesome scene. The Pope, witnessing the sight of their blood drenching his garments, began to let out piercing screams. It was evident from the agony on his face that he was in severe pain, caused by the blood of the Witnesses. In a rush, he quickly removed his clothes, tearing them off and carelessly tossing them onto the floor. The man was practically undressed, with only a few articles of clothing covering his body. Two aides hurriedly made their way towards him. Taking a flag from nearby, they skillfully wrapped it around his body, ensuring it was snug and secure. With earnest effort, they supported the Pope's weight and accompanied him as he persisted in his screams of suffering, guiding him to the rear of the platform and then down the stairs. Within a matter of seconds, a strong gust of wind began to howl, and the once cloudless sky rapidly transformed into a dark and ominous expanse. At that moment, a powerful tremor shook the Earth, causing the stands and platform to vibrate intensely. The guillotines, with their sharp blades, were ominously waving in the air. Afterwards, everything became still and silent.

Cain departed from the reviewing stand. With confident strides, he made his way from the stands towards the podium. As he made his way up the stairs, he proceeded to empty the baskets. The platform was witness to the gruesome sight as both heads, covered in blood, fell simultaneously. Following that, he continued to give instructions to the soldiers.

“In accordance with the teachings of Prophet Mohammed, it is directed that the tips of their fingers be severed and subsequently thrown onto the ground.”

Two of the military personnel took cutters and cut the ends of the fingers off both Elijah's and Enoch’s hands. They left them scattered on the floor of the stage area by the bodies. After the altercation, Cain proceeded to kick Enoch's head forcefully.

“I am now free from your control, and you no longer hold power over me. For a span of more than 4,800 years, you have remained in my shadow. We are determined and confident that we will emerge victorious in this battle. It is my resolve to ensure that you and your God are permanently banished from Earth. Embrace the inevitable and let the maggots feast upon you in the cycle of life.”

Before leaving, Cain made sure to give the soldiers extra instructions.

“Take the bodies off the platform and dispose of them by throwing them onto the streets. Put their heads at their feet. Take their fingertips and scatter them across the pavement. Leave them for eternity, where they will lie in the streets with decayed corpses. It is my desire to have a guard stationed at both ends of this street. Under no circumstances should you allow anyone to approach their physical beings. Do you understand?”

With a graceful gesture, they inclined their heads in a bow.

“Yes, Lord Cain,” they said with heads bowed, as they busied themselves removing the bodies.

With a sudden movement, Cain swiftly clutched his cloak and directed his attention towards the street. The trainer returned his chariot, and he graciously stepped into it. As he cracked his whip, the horses rapidly began galloping at full speed in the direction from which he had arrived.

When the others had departed and the stands were starting to empty, Brad shifted his attention towards Nancy.

“It is my sincere hope that this brings an end to the terror that has plagued the world.”

Brad remained silent after his comment. He was aware that the true horror was just about to unfold. He had a deep understanding of the scriptures.

### Chapter 112

##### In Front Of The Temple

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Bodies Left In The Streets Of Jerusalem

T

he gallows and stands were gone. Yona took a folding chair, a thermos, a bag of foodstuffs, his Bible and put his belongings between the dead bodies of Elijah and Enoch, lying in the street. He picked up each head and positioned them near their necks. Yona gathered their fingertips spread around the road and put them between their bodies. He settled down in his chair, looked at his watch, then did a quick calculation: 78 hours to go. Yona said a prayer, sat back and opened his holy book to Revelation. There he read the verse describing the resurrection of these two Prophets.

‘When they finish their testimony, the beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit will make war against them, overcome them, and kill them. And their dead bodies will lie in the street of the great city which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified. Then those from the peoples, tribes, tongues, and nations will see their dead bodies three-and-a-half days, and not allow their dead bodies to be put into graves. And those who dwell on the Earth will rejoice over them, make merry, and send gifts to one another, because these two Prophets tormented those who dwell on the Earth.’

‘Now after the three-and-a-half days the breath of life from God entered them, and they stood on their feet, and great fear fell on those who saw them. And they heard a loud voice from Heaven saying to them, “Come up here.” And they ascended to Heaven in a cloud, and their enemies saw them. In the same hour there was a great earthquake, and a tenth of the city fell. In the earthquake seven thousand people were killed, and the rest were afraid and gave glory to the God of Heaven. The second woe is past. Behold, the third woe is coming quickly.’

Yona noticed a block away in each direction were stationed Alliance soldiers. The camera crews were still present. They were from Eden II, he thought. He could not be sure. A military vehicle drove down the street toward him. The hummer stopped where Yona was sitting. A soldier stepped out and stood above him.

“What are you doing here? The soldier asked with contempt, stating that this area was restricted.

“Allow me to introduce myself as Yona, the Chief Priest of Israel. It is my entitlement to be present at this location in order to accompany the deceased individuals. The Israeli government has granted me permission to stay in this place.”

With determination in his eyes, the soldier took confident strides as he made his way to the waiting jeep. He utilized his radio to communicate and inform others about Yona's presence. Following a brief period, he came back and addressed him in a stern manner.

“You are welcome to stay for as long as you like. I must insist that you refrain from touching these bodies in the future. Is it clear to you what I mean?”

“Yes sir, I understand.”

As the soldier left, Yona leaned back in his chair. As the sun began to set, darkness slowly enveloped the surroundings. Before drifting off to sleep, he grabbed the shawl he had brought and covered himself with it.

### Chapter 113

##### Great Room

##### Eden II

##### Parties And Plans

I

t was nearly 3:00 a.m. and John was sitting on one of the couches in Eden II’s great room. The Network continued broadcasting the all-night parties globally. They went from city to city and interviewed people. They were joyous; the Witnesses were dead. Veronica sat watching them revel on the monitor while attempting to cheer John up.

“John, they will be alive in a few days, and return to God. Why are you sad?”

"I am going to miss them. I loved them. I never thought in my wildest dreams, I would be a part of Revelation. Currently, I have thoughts of when Christ was crucified. I was there, I know I was. How did they do this to me?”

“Same way they transformed Jack South into Enoch. You currently understand, as Enoch did, every woe God will dish out to humanity. Do not be concerned, John. Your passion and knowledge over the next three years are going to benefit many.”

Enil wandered into the room and addressed John and Veronica.

“No access is allowed where the bodies lie by 'The Alliance of Ten'. However, the High Priest Yona is there. They agreed to let him sit and guard their remains. We have positioned cameras outside 'The Temple' and on top of the Golden Gate. Moreover, we have hidden cameras placed in the trees across the street where they lie. We also have audio. When Enoch and Elijah are called up, we will document it on camera with sound. Our team will also launch their drones at that time.”

“Thank you Enil. As always, you do excellent work. Let me ask you, since both Elijah and Enoch are gone. Can you tell me who you are?”

Enil laughed at John's question for the umpteenth time.

“I am Enil, John. Enil is all you need to know.”

Once Enil left, Veronica looked at John with her eyebrow raised.

“The reporter in you never stops, does it?”

“No, it does not. I must find out who Enil is.”

“Let that one lie. For now, we are in need of rest. Once Enoch and Elijah rise from the dead, you are taking their place, fighting Cain. We have to go to bed.

“Are you trying to flirt with me?”

“Maybe,” she replied, giggling.

### Chapter 114

##### Three Days Later In Front Of The Temple

##### Jerusalem, Israel

##### Yona And The Messenger

Y

ona looked at his watch. Two hours to go. He opened the bag and took out a bottle of water and a couple of sandwiches. It had been a while since he had eaten. He started in on the sandwich. The night sky was dark with no moon. They executed the Witnesses at noon. Midnight is the time they will rise. He looked up, then down the street. The soldiers were still at their posts. Just a few hours remaining.

After another bite of his sandwich, Yona had a strong feeling that there was someone in close proximity to him. When his head turned, a man standing near him became visible. It was impossible not to notice the striking difference in his appearance, as he emanated a radiant glow. It is quite odd that he suddenly appeared out of nowhere. He started asking questions of this stranger.

“It's extremely remarkable that you were able to bypass the soldiers. Can you explain how you accomplished this?”

“I walked.”

"Past the military personnel?"

“They could not see me.”

“Who are you?”

“A Messenger.”

“A Messenger to who?”

“You Yona. A Messenger, for you.”

“From whom?”

“Adonai.”

“Yahweh? Who are you!”

“Let's temporarily ignore the matter of my personal identity. Yona, may I ask what you are hoping for? Three days have elapsed since you first arrived at this place.”

"My anticipation is focused on the miraculous event of Elijah and Enoch rising from the dead, and I am anxiously anticipating it to happen."

“Yona, that is exactly what we thought. It is crucial that you take the time to listen to what I have to say. In less than two hours, we will be illuminating this area with a bright, azure glow. Do you remember the blue light that Enoch always had around him to ensure his safety?”

"Absolutely, I do."

“This light is similar. Unfortunately, the fact that you are sitting here poses a problem. It is possible that the radiant light could be harmful to you. Allow me to offer a suggestion that might be of interest.”

"What?" he exclaimed, his voice tinged with bewilderment.

“Go to the gate and wait. The view will be fine.

"Can't I stay here, maybe join them?" he pleaded, his eyes filled with longing.

“Yona, don't forget that there are still responsibilities for you to fulfill until the Lord Jesus returns. Now, move along quickly and with urgency. Soon, you will witness the magnificent glory of God and be captivated by the divine resonance of His voice.”

"As you wish," Yona said, his tone filled with respect, as he stood and bowed deeply to the Messenger.

He carefully folded up his chair, gathering his food and thermos in his hands. 'I just spoke with an Angel,' he thought to himself, his heart filled with awe.

Yona's excitement grew as he climbed the hill towards the gate, eagerly anticipating what awaited him. The clock was ticking, and the moment was drawing near. He felt euphoric.

### Chapter 115

##### Eden II Broadcast Studios

##### Live From The Streets Of Jerusalem, Israel

##### Come up Here

E

den II’s monitors showed the street where the Witnesses lay. Earlier, they saw Yona leave the area and walk toward the gate. Why, they did not know. Enil walked over to the anchor desk to talk to them.

“Our cameras are working, capturing every detail in high definition, John. These LED's have the ability to focus and intensify light. Nonetheless, we comprehend that when they ascend, the entire vicinity will be illuminated as if it were daytime, despite the clocks indicating midnight, in Israel. In addition, there is a drone in close proximity, waiting and hidden from sight. It's important that we don't alert the soldiers by flying in just yet, so we'll need to be cautious in our approach.”

“Okay, Enil, he said with a hint of anxiety in his voice.” How much longer?”

“About five minutes. I need you and your entire crew at the anchor desk, prepared and poised for the live broadcast. Timing is crucial in this situation. We only get one shot at showing the world the failure of Cain and his demons, and we must make it count. Are we ready?”

"Yes," they replied confidently, their voices filled with readiness.

John sat down with Mary Ann and Geraldo, looking each of them in the eye as he began to speak.

“If you are not experiencing any jitters, it's a sign that something might be off. I have never reported on a resurrection!"

Geraldo's laughter filled the room, and Mary Ann couldn't help but join in.

"Neither have we," they both said in unison, their faces covered in smiles.

As the countdown ticked down, they anxiously awaited their turn, listening to the announcer's introduction.

“Welcome, everyone, to Eden II News. Joining us from the bustling Eden II Newsroom, John Roddenburg is here to provide live coverage. Tonight, we are diving into the fascinating story of the resurrection of the Witnesses Elijah and Enoch. And now, introducing your host, John Roddenburg.”

"Hello world!" John exclaimed with a cheerful tone. “As we check our clocks, it's almost midnight, 12 p.m., in Israel. As we prepare for tonight's broadcast, the weight of the recent executions of the Witnesses hangs heavy in our minds. On the monitor behind me, you will see the lifeless bodies of Enoch and Elijah, unmoved since Cain and his demons left them there. To ensure a better viewing experience, we are planning to implement a split screen for our viewers. We anxiously await the moment when God fulfills His promise to resurrect His messengers, as foretold by John.”

"Yona, the Chief Priest of Israel, has been sitting vigilantly, guarding their bodies for over three days," Mary Ann said. “He was allowed to stay on the street by the guards at both ends, though the reasons behind their decision remained a mystery. He has since moved to the front of the Golden Gate.”

As they watched the monitor, they noticed a flicker of movement near the Golden Gate. John excitedly pointed out the bustling activity happening.

“The Golden Gate is being opened. By 'The Temple', a crowd of people from Israel has gathered, hoping to witness a miracle from God. The 'Alliance of Ten' is unable to prevent them from observing from that location.”

Positioned across the street, one of Enil's cameras swiftly zoomed in, capturing a close-up of the gate. On The Temple steps, walls, and grounds, a sea of people had gathered to witness the resurrection, their excited murmurs filling the air.

"If we calculated this correctly," John informed his viewing audience, "something should occur in the upcoming minute."

Right after John finished speaking, the air was filled with a deafening rumble coming from the skies. The cameras and sound equipment at the site were picking up the sound very clearly. The experience felt like being caught in a wind tunnel. Suddenly, a radiant and dazzling light inundated the entire scene, causing their cameras to be momentarily blinded while their sensors adjusted to the intensity. The video they received was of such high quality that it looked as radiant as the sun, as if it had been filmed outdoors. Out of nowhere, a radiant bluish light appeared and illuminated the bodies of Enoch and Elijah, creating an eerie glow. The drones operated by Enil swiftly flew closer to the lifeless bodies, their advanced cameras meticulously documenting even the smallest aspects.

With a sudden jerk, Enoch's body twitched, a reflexive response to an unknown stimulus. The severed head then proceeded to move across the pavement until it reached its original position on the neck. Suddenly, in the blink of an eye, it was reattached. The same thing happened to Elijah as was previously described.

Each of their 20 fingertips were lifted up into a small whirlwind, creating a mesmerizing sight. At that moment, the whirlwind divided itself into four distinct sections before coming to rest on the hands of both Enoch and Elijah's bodies. Once the winds had subsided, their fingertips had been successfully reattached.

The chests of the deceased, which were swollen, began to gradually shrink back to their normal size. The gray complexion of their skin, which was a result of death, transformed into a subtle pink shade. The transformation of Enoch and Elijah from death to life was a spectacle for all to witness.

In the middle of the street, Enoch sat up straight, looking around with alertness. With a smile on his face, he gazed up at the illuminated sky above him. With a sudden burst of energy, Elijah straightened his posture, shifted his gaze towards Enoch, and responded with a beaming smile.

With the completion of the miraculous act of resurrection, their bodies were made whole again, and as a result, they both stood upright. From above, the voice of God reverberated and could be heard by all, with each word distinctly clear.

“**Come up here!”**

Following that, a mist enveloped Elijah and Enoch, gradually lifting them off the ground. With their eyes intently focused and looking in the direction of the Heavens, the world watched as the mist gently carried them higher and higher.

Enoch purposefully directed his gaze at the camera, with a clear intention in mind. When Johns eyes met his through the monitor, a radiant smile lit up Enochs face. It was evident to him that Enoch was sending him a message of hope.

As they continued to rise, both of them gazed upwards, their eyes fixated on the vast expanse of the sky. Suddenly, within the span of a millisecond, they vanished from sight. The bright light gradually faded away into nothingness. They were in the presence of their Father, God.

The trio of individuals at the anchor desk were all still fixated on the monitor, which had now become completely blank. Mary Ann bravely took action and successfully broke the spell that had been cast upon them.

“The experience we just had was absolutely incredible!" Mary Ann said, with tears of joy in her eyes expressing her overwhelming emotions.

“Yes, it was,” John said. “An earthquake is expected to cause 7,000 deaths. It could come at any moment.”

The remote cameras quickly readjusted their settings to compensate for the lower level of light. In their line of sight, the soldiers were actively searching the vicinity where Enoch and Elijah's bodies had previously been located. Almost a hundred people were present. They were conducting a thorough search of both the road and the hill, looking for any signs of the bodies.

A mighty earthquake suddenly started to tremble in Israel. The force of the impact caused the soldiers to be knocked to the ground. The sheer magnitude of the quake made the Golden Gate shake uncontrollably. The duration of the tremor was a total of 12 seconds. The sound of sirens could be heard from afar by them. John turned his gaze away from the monitor towards Mary Ann.

“As the Bible tells us, this woe is past. Now the wrath of God will descend upon the non-believers.”

John leaned back in his seat, a wide smile lighting up his face, and a sense of contentment washing over him. Looking directly into the cameras, he delivered an extraordinary message.

“As believers, let us follow in the footsteps of Enoch and Elijah, persevering in our mission to save and bring others to salvation. As we look ahead, we are aware of what our future holds, as we witnessed the resurrection of Enoch and Elijah. We are called to give all the glory and praise to God!

##### The End of The Trumpets of God

Next, the story of John and Mark as the evil of Cain and Lucifer permeate over the entire globe.

**Book V**

**Babylon,**

**Revival of the Roman Empire**

In Book V, be an eyewitness as the tide is turning. Christians unite to fight and rebel against evil all over the world.

As the Bowls of Wrath are poured out, the team uses them to their advantage to keep Lord Cain on notice that Christians are mighty warriors who will not back down from the fight.

After reading Book V, you will want to pick up your sword and take out a demon or two yourself with the courage and warrior spirit of Joshua.

Thank you for reading and may God bless you.